## ACADEMY OF ROMANIAN SCIENTISTS



## annals

## Series on MATHEMATICS AND ITS APPLICATIONS

## Volume 7 2015 <br> Number 2

ISSN 2066-6594
TOPICS:

- ORDINARY AND PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS
- OPTIMIZATION, OPTIMAL CONTROL AND DESIGN
- NUMERICAL ANALYSIS AND SCIENTIFIC COMPUTING
- ALGEBRAIC, TOPOLOGICAL AND DIFFERENTIAL STRUCTURES
- PROBABILITY AND STATISTICS
- ALGEBRAIC AND DIFFERENTIAL GEOMETRY
- MATHEMATICAL MODELLING IN MECHANICS ENGINEERING SCIENCES
- MATHEMATICAL ECONOMY AND GAME THEORY
- MATHEMATICAL PHYSICS AND APPLICATIONS


# Annals of the Academy of Romanian Scientists 

## Series on Mathematics and its Applications

Founding Editor-in-Chief

Gen.(r) Prof. Dr. Vasile Cândea
President of the Academy of Romanian Scientists

## Co-Editor

Academician Aureliu Săndulescu
President of the Section of Mathematics

## Series Editors

Fredi Tröltzsch (Technische Universität, Berlin), troeltz@math.TU-Berlin.de Dan Tiba (Institute of Mathematics, Bucharest), Dan.Tiba@imar.ro

## Editorial Board

D. Andrica (Cluj), dorinandrica@yahoo.com, L. Badea (Bucharest), Lori.Badea@imar.ro, M. Birsan (Duisburg), mircea.birsan@uni-due.de, J.F. Bonnans (Paris), Frederic.Bonnans@inria.fr, M. Buliga (Bucharest), marius.buliga@gmail.com, A. Cernea (Bucharest), acernea@fmi.unibuc.ro, C. Fetecau (Iasi), c_fetecau@yahoo.com, A. Isar (Bucharest), isar@theory.nipne.ro, L. Ixaru (Bucharest), ixaru@theory.nipne.ro, K. Kunisch (Graz), karl.kunisch@uni-graz.at, R. Litcanu (Iasi), litcanu@uaic.ro, M. Megan (Timisoara), megan@math.uvt.ro, C. P. Niculescu (Craiova), c.niculescu47@clicknet.ro, A. Perjan (Chisinau), perjan@usm.md, J. P. Raymond (Toulouse), raymond@mip.ups-tlse.fr, L. Restuccia (Messina), Irestuccia@unime.it, C. Scutaru (Bucharest), corneliascutaru@yahoo.com, M. Sofonea (Perpignan), sofonea@univ-perp.fr, S. Solomon (Jerusalem), co3giacs@gmail.com, J. Sprekels (Berlin), sprekels@wias-berlin.de, A.-M. Stoica (Bucharest), amstoica@rdslink.ro, M. Tucsnak (Nancy), Tucsnak@iecn.unancy.fr, I. I. Vrabie (Iasi), ivrabie@uaic.ro, M. Yamamoto (Tokyo), myama@ms.u-tokyo.ac.jp.

Secretariate: stiintematematice@gmail.com

Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci.
Ser. Math. Appl.
ISSN 2066-6594
Vol. 7, No. 2/2015

## CONTENTS

Mihai-Gabriel Babuţia, Mihail MeganExponential dichotomy concepts for evolution operators on the half-line209
Wahida Kaidouchi, Nesrine Kamouche, Mohamed Zine Aissaoui
Existence and uniqueness of the solution for the coagulation-fragmentation equation of water drops in fall. ..... 227
Gaetana Restuccia, Paola L. Staglianò
Ideals generated by linear forms and symmetric algebras. ..... 260
Constantin Fetecau, Corina Fetecau, Shehraz AkhtarPermanent solutions for some axial motions of generalizedBurgers fluids in cylindrical domains.271
Johnny Henderson, Abdelghani Ouahab, Samia Youcefi
Higher Order Boundary Value Problem for Impulsive Differential Inclusions. ..... 285
Mihaela Roxana NicolaiAn algorithm for the computation of the generalizedsolution for implicit systems310

Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci.

Ser. Math. Appl.
ISSN 2066-6594
Vol. 7, No. 2/2015

# EXPONENTIAL DICHOTOMY CONCEPTS FOR EVOLUTION OPERATORS IN THE HALF-LINE* 

Mihai-Gabriel Babuţia ${ }^{\dagger} \quad$ Mihail Megan ${ }^{\ddagger}$


#### Abstract

The paper considers three concepts of nonuniform exponential dichotomy and their correspondents for the case of uniform exponential dichotomy on the half-line in the general framework of evolution operators in Banach spaces. Two of these concepts can be considered for evolution operators that are not invertible on the unstable manifold yielding more general behaviors. Using two particular classes of evolution operators defined on the Banach space of bounded real-valued sequences, we give some illustrative examples which clarify the relations between these concepts.


MSC: primary 34D09; secondary 34D05
keywords: Evolution operator; exponential dichotomy, strong exponential dichotomy, weak exponential dichotomy.

## 1 Introduction

The notion of exponential dichotomy introduced by Perron in [24] plays a central role in the qualitative theory of dynamical systems, which has

[^0]an impressive development. The exponential dichotomy property for linear dynamical systems has gained prominence since the appearance of two fundamental monographs of J. L. Massera and J. J. Schäffer [15], J. L. Daleckii and M. G. Krein [12]. These were followed by the important books of C. Chicone and Y. Latushkin [11] and L. Barreira and C. Valls [5].

The most important dichotomy concept used in the qualitative theory of ordinary differential equations is the uniform exponential dichotomy (see [13], [14], [9], [16], [18], [27], [29], [32], [31], [33]). In the nonautonomous setting, the concept of uniform exponential dichotomy is too restrictive and it is important to look for more general behaviors, for example the nonuniform case, where a consistent contribution is due to L. Barreira and C. Valls ([6], [7], [8]). Their study is motivated by ergodic theory and nonuniform hyperbolic theory (we refer the reader to the monograph of L. Barreira and Ya. Pesin [4] for details and further information). Furthermore, an important property of this asymptotic behavior (both in the uniform and nonuniform case) is the roughness of the dichotomy which can be seen from the papers [27], [34] and [35]. Another direction for the study of nonuniform behaviors is due to the members of the Research Center in Differential Equations from West University of Timişoara, Romania, who study a more general type of nonuniform exponential dichotomy which does not impose an upper bound on the dichotomy projections (see [16], [20], [19], [17],[25], [26], [3], [22], [21], [28], [30]).

We prove that in the particular case when the nonuniformity is of exponential type and the dichotomy projections are exponentially bounded, the three dichotomy concepts presented in this paper are equivalent (Theorem $3)$.

In this paper we consider three concepts of nonuniform exponential dichotomy (exponential dichotomy, strong exponential dichotomy, weak exponential dichotomy) and their correspondents for the case of uniform exponential dichotomy for evolution operators on the half-line. Thus we obtain a systematic classification of exponential dichotomy concepts with the connections between them. Using two general classes of evolution operators, we clarify the relations between these concepts. In contrast with the concept of exponential dichotomy, two concepts of strong exponential dichotomy and weak exponential dichotomy (see Proposition 1 and Open Problem 2) can be defined for evolution operators which are not invertible on the unstable manifolds, but, in contrast with the invertible case, more general behaviors are obtained.

We remark that in this paper we assume the existence of a family of projections $P$ which is compatible with a given evolution operator $U$. At a
fist view the existence of such a family $P$ is a strong hypothesis. The impediment can be eliminated using the notion of admissibility, by associating to an evolution operator $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ the integral equation

$$
f(t)=U(t, s) f(s)+\int_{s}^{t} U(t, \tau) v(\tau) d \tau, \quad(t, s) \in \Delta
$$

where $f$ and $v$ belong to some Banach function spaces. Under the hypothesis of admissibility, the existence of the family of projections and the dichotomy property is deduced (for details, see for example [8], [19], [30], [32], [23] [31], [18]).

## 2 Dichotomic pairs

Let $X$ be a real or complex Banach space and $\mathcal{B}(X)$ the Banach algebra of all bounded linear operators on $X$. The norms on $X$ and $\mathcal{B}(X)$ will be denoted by $\|\cdot\|$. Denote by $I$ the identity operator on $X$.
We will also use the following notations:

$$
\Delta=\left\{(t, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{2}: t \geq s\right\} \quad \text { and } \quad T=\Delta \times X
$$

Definition 1. A map $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is called a family of projections on $X$ if

$$
P(t)^{2}=P(t), \quad \text { for every } t \geq 0
$$

In particular

- if there are $M \geq 1$ and $\gamma \geq 0$ such that

$$
\|P(t)\| \leq M e^{\gamma t}, \quad \text { for all } t \geq 0
$$

then we say that $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is exponentially bounded;

- if there is $M \geq 1$ such that

$$
\|P(t)\| \leq M, \quad \text { for all } t \geq 0
$$

then we say that $P$ is bounded.
Remark 1. If $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is a family of projections on $X$ then

$$
Q: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X) \quad \text { defined by } \quad Q(t)=I-P(t)
$$

is also a family of projections on $X$, which is called the complementary family of projections of $P$.

Definition 2. A map $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is called an evolution operator on $X$ if
( $\left.e_{1}\right) U(t, t)=I$ for every $t \geq 0$;
( $\left.e_{2}\right) U(t, s) U\left(s, t_{0}\right)=U\left(t, t_{0}\right)$ for all $(t, s),\left(s, t_{0}\right) \in \Delta$.
Definition 3. A family of projections $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is said to be invariant for the evolution operator $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ if

$$
U(t, s) P(s)=P(t) U(t, s)
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
Definition 4. A family of projections $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ is said to be compatible with the evolution operator $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ if
( $c_{1}$ ) $P$ is invariant for $U$;
( $c_{2}$ ) for every $(t, s) \in \Delta$ the restriction of $U(t, s)$ on $\operatorname{Ker} P(s)$ is an isomorphism from Ker $P(s)$ to Ker $P(t)$

If $P$ is compatible with $U$ then the pair $(U, P)$ is called a dichotomic pair.
Remark 2. If $(U, P)$ is a dichotomic pair then for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$ one has that

$$
U(t, s) Q(s)=Q(t) U(t, s) .
$$

Remark 3. If $(U, P)$ is a dichotomic pair and for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$ the linear operator $U(t, s)$ is invertible (for example, if the evolution operator arises from linear ODEs) then $(U, Q)$ is also a dichotomic pair, where $Q$ is the complementary family of $P$.

Remark 4. If $(U, P)$ is a dichotomic pair then there exists $V: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ such that $V(t, s)$ is an isomorphism from Ker $P(t)$ to Ker $P(s)$ and
$\left(v_{1}\right) U(t, s) V(t, s) Q(t)=Q(t) ;$
$\left(v_{2}\right) V(t, s) U(t, s) Q(s)=Q(s)$;
$\left(v_{3}\right) V(t, s) Q(t)=Q(s) V(t, s) Q(t)$
for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$. The map $V$ is called the skew-evolution operator associated to the pair $(U, P)$.

## 3 Exponential dichotomy

In this section we present the exponential dichotomy concepts considered (both in the uniform and the nonuniform case), for example, in [1], [15], [18], [19], [23], [28], [29], [30].

In what follows, let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair and let $V$ be the skewevolution operator associated to the pair $(U, P)$.
Definition 5. We say that the pair $(U, P)$ is exponentially dichotomic (e.d) if there are $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(e d_{1}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s) x\| \\
\left(e d_{2}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$, where $Q$ is the complementary family of $P$. In the particular case when $\beta=0$ we say that $(U, P)$ is uniformly exponentially dichotomic (u.e.d).

Remark 5. As particular cases of the above defined concept, we obtain the following concepts:
(i) if $P(t)=I$ for all $t \geq 0$, then we obtain the exponential stability property;
(ii) if $P(t)=I$ for all $t \geq 0$ and $\beta=0$, then we obtain the uniform exponential stability property.

Remark 6. If $(U, P)$ is u.e.d then it is e.d. The converse is not generally true, as shown in Example 1, (vii).

The above concept allows us to define the exponential dichotomy property for evolution operators in the general case in which the invertibility on the kernels of the projections is not assumed i.e. $P$ is only invariant for $U$. Next, we present another result concerning the nonuniform exponential dichotomy which, as it can be seen from the two conditions of the theorem, can also be asserted in the general (noninvertible) case.

Theorem 1. The dichotomic pair $(U, P)$ is exponentially dichotomic with $\beta \in[0, \alpha)$ (where $\alpha$ and $\beta$ are given by Definition 5) if and only if there exists $N \geq 1$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(e d_{1}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s) x\| \\
\left(e d_{2}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.

Proof. It is sufficient to show that $\left(e d_{2}\right) \Leftrightarrow\left(e d_{2}^{\prime}\right)$.
For $\left(e d_{2}\right) \Rightarrow\left(e d_{2}^{\prime}\right)$ we have that

$$
e^{(\alpha-\beta)(t-s)}\|Q(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta t} e^{-\beta(t-s)}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|=N e^{\beta s}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|
$$

and for $\left(e d_{2}^{\prime}\right) \Rightarrow\left(e d_{2}\right)$ we observe that

$$
e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|=N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.
As an immediate consequence we obtain
Corollary 1. If the dichotomic pair $(U, P)$ is exponentially dichotomic with $\beta \in[0, \alpha)$ then

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} U(t, s) P(s) x=0 \quad \text { for every } \quad(s, x) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times X \quad \text { and } \\
\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|=\infty \quad \text { for every } \quad(s, x) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times X \text { with } Q(s) x \neq 0
\end{gathered}
$$

Remark 7. The condition $\beta \in[0, \alpha)$ is essential for the validity of the previous corollary, phenomenon illustrated in Example 1, (x).

A characterization of the concept of exponential dichotomy is given by
Theorem 2. Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair. Then $(U, P)$ is exponentially dichotomic if and only if there exist $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(e d_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\| \\
\left(e d_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s) x\| \\
& \leq Q(t) x \|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.
Proof. We only have to prove the equivalence between the instability properties (i.e. $\left.\left(e d_{2}\right) \Leftrightarrow\left(e d_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)$. To prove that $\left(e d_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right) \Rightarrow\left(e d_{2}\right)$, we observe that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s) x\| \stackrel{\left(v_{2}\right)}{=} e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) U(t, s) Q(s) x\|= \\
& =e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) U(t, s) Q(s) x\| \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.
Similarly, by $\left(v_{3}\right),\left(e d_{2}\right)$ and $\left(v_{1}\right)$ it results that

$$
\begin{aligned}
e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) x\| & \stackrel{\left(v_{3}\right)}{=} e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s) V(t, s) Q(t) x\| \leq \\
& \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s) V(t, s) Q(t) x\|= \\
& =N e^{\beta t}\|Q(t) U(t, s) V(t, s) Q(t) x\| \stackrel{\left(v_{1}\right)}{=} N e^{\beta t}\|Q(t) x\|
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.

As a particular case we obtain
Corollary 2. Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair. Then $(U, P)$ is uniformly exponentially dichotomic if and only if there are $N \geq 1$ and $\alpha>0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\text { ued }_{1}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\| \leq N\|P(s) x\| \\
\left(\text { ued }_{2}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) x\| \leq N\|Q(t) x\|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.

## 4 Weak exponential dichotomy

Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair, $Q$ the complementary family of $P$ and $V$ the skew-evolution operator associated to the pair $(U, P)$. We introduce the following dichotomy concept:

Definition 6. We say that the pair $(U, P)$ is weakly exponentially dichotomic (w.e.d) if there are $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\text { wed }_{1}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s)\| \\
\left(\text { wed }_{2}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \leq N e^{\beta t}\|Q(t)\|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
In the particular case when $\beta=0$ we say that $(U, P)$ is uniformly weakly exponentially dichotomic (u.w.e.d).

Remark 8. It is obvious that u.w.e.d $\Rightarrow$ w.e.d. The converse implication is not generally valid (for details, see Example 1 (vii)).

Remark 9. The following implications hold:

$$
\text { e.d } \Rightarrow \text { w.e.d } \quad \text { and } \quad \text { u.e. } d \Rightarrow \text { u.w.e.d }
$$

## Open Problems.

1) We ask wether the reciprocal implications from Remark 9 hold.
2) For example, in [1], a "weak exponential dichotomy" concept was introduced in the uniform case, in the general framework of evolution operators, in which the assumption of invertibility of the given evolution operator on the kernels of the projections was dropped. Having in mind such "weak" behavior in our nonuniform case, we propose for solving or disproving the following implication:

$$
(U, P) \text { is w.e.d } \Rightarrow \begin{cases}\exists N \geq 1, & \alpha>0, \beta \geq 0 \text { such that } \forall(t, s) \in \Delta \\ \left(\text { wed }_{1}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s)\| \\ \left(\text { wed }_{2}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s)\|\end{cases}
$$

In what concerns Open Problem 2, we posses a partial result, given by the following assertion.

Remark 10. The converse of the implication from Open Problem 2 is not generally valid (see Example 2).

## 5 Strong exponential dichotomy

In this section we consider another exponential dichotomy concept used in the papers of L. Barreira and C. Valls ([6], [7], [8]). Connections with the previous dichotomy concepts are given. It is shown that in the particular case when the family of projections is exponentially bounded then the exponential dichotomy concepts presented in this paper are equivalent. Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair and let $Q$ be the complementary family of $P$. Let $V$ be the skew-evolution operator associated to the pair $(U, P)$.

Definition 7. We say that the pair $(U, P)$ is strongly exponentially dichotomic (s.e.d) if there are $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(s e d_{1}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\| \\
\left(s e d_{2}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) x\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|x\| \\
& \leq x \|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s, x) \in T$.
If the conditions $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}\right)$ hold for $\beta=0$ then we say that $(U, P)$ is uniformly strongly exponentially dichotomic (u.s.e.d).

Remark 11. It is obvious that u.s.e.d $\Rightarrow$ s.e.d. The converse implication is not generally true (see Example 1 (ix)).

Remark 12. If $(U, P)$ is s.e.d then from $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{1}\right)$, for $t=s$, we obtain that

$$
\|P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s} \quad \text { for all } \quad s \geq 0
$$

i.e. $P$ is exponentially bounded. In particular, if $(U, P)$ is u.s.e.d then $P$ is bounded.

Remark 13. If $(U, P)$ is s.e.d then by substituting $x$ by $P(s) x$ in $\left(s e d_{1}\right)$ respectively by $Q(s) x$ in $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}\right)$ we obtain the implication s.e.d $\Rightarrow$ e.d. In particular, u.s.e.d $\Rightarrow$ u.e.d. The converse implications are not generally valid (see Example 1 (viii)).

Remark 14. Having in mind the wide usage of the e.d concept and the s.e.d concept, it is reasonable to consider a dichotomy concept which has the estimations in the operator norm (see Remark 15) as in the s.e.d concept, but in the meantime, as in the case of the e.d concept, not to assume any restriction on the family of projections (see Remark 12).

Remark 15. From Definition 7 it results that $(U, P)$ is s.e.d if and only if there exist $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\operatorname{sed}_{1}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s} \\
\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \leq N e^{\beta t}
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
In particular, for $\beta=0$ we have that $(U, P)$ is u.s.e.d if and only if there are $N \geq 1$ and $\alpha>0$ with the following properties:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\text { used }_{1}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N \\
\left(\text { used }_{2}^{\prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \leq N
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
A difference between the result of Theorem 1 and its correspondent for the s.e.d property is given by
Proposition 1. If the pair $(U, P)$ is s.e.d then there exists $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\operatorname{sed}_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s} \\
\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right) & e^{\alpha(t-s)} \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s)\|
\end{array}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
Proof. It is sufficient to prove that $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}^{\prime}\right) \Rightarrow\left(\operatorname{sed}_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Indeed, from $\left(s e d_{2}^{\prime}\right)$, $\left(v_{2}\right)$ and $\left(c_{1}\right)$ we obtain that

$$
\begin{aligned}
e^{\alpha(t-s)} \leq e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s)\| & =e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t) U(t, s) Q(s)\| \\
& \leq N e^{\beta t}\|U(t, s) Q(s)\|
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.

Remark 16. The converse of the above proposition is not generally valid (see Example 2).

Remark 17. Having in mind the above proposition and remark, we can observe that if we consider the s.e.d property in the general case of invariant families of projections (without the invertibility on the unstable direction of the evolution operator), we obtain a more general behavior. Such behaviors were also pointed out in [1] (in the uniform case) and [2] (in the discrete case).

The main result of this section is
Theorem 3. Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair with the property that $P$ is exponentially bounded. Then the following properties are equivalent:
(i) $(U, P)$ is strongly exponentially dichotomic;
(ii) $(U, P)$ is exponentially dichotomic;
(iii) $(U, P)$ is weakly exponentially dichotomic.

Proof. The implications $(i) \Rightarrow(i i) \Rightarrow($ iii $)$ follow from Remarks 13 and 9 . For $(i i i) \Rightarrow(i)$ assume that $(U, P)$ is w.e.d. Then there exist $M \geq 1$ and $\gamma \geq 0$ such that for all $t \geq 0$,

$$
\|P(t)\| \leq M e^{\gamma t}
$$

Then, for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$, from $\left(w e d_{1}\right)$ and $\left(w e d_{2}\right)$ it follows that

$$
e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{\beta s}\|P(s)\| \leq 2 M N e^{(\beta+\gamma) s}
$$

and

$$
e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \leq N e^{\beta t}\|Q(t)\| \leq 2 M N e^{(\beta+\gamma) t}
$$

which, by Remark 15 , shows that $(U, P)$ is s.e.d.
As a particular case, we have
Corollary 3. Let $(U, P)$ be a dichotomic pair with the property that $P$ is a bounded family of projections. Then the following assertions are equivalent:
(i) $(U, P)$ is u.s.e.d;
(ii) $(U, P)$ is u.e.d;
(iii) $(U, P)$ is u.w.e.d.

Remark 18. By Remarks 6, 8, 9, 13 and 16, we obtain the connections between the dichotomy concepts studied in this paper. These are illustrated in the following diagram:


## 6 Examples and counterexamples

The aim of this section is to give some illustrative examples and counterexamples which show that the converse of the implications presented in the previous sections are not valid. We begin with some notations used in what follows.

Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the set of all families of projections $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ satisfying the equality

$$
P(t) P(s)=P(s) \quad \text { for all } t, s \geq 0 .
$$

We observe that if $P \in \mathcal{P}$ then its complementary $Q$ verifies the relations

$$
Q(t) Q(s)=Q(t) \quad \text { and } \quad Q(t) P(s)=0 \quad \text { for all } t, s \geq 0
$$

We shall denote by $\mathcal{U}_{1}$ the set of all $u: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow(0, \infty)$ with the property that there exist $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
e^{\alpha(t-s)} u(s) \leq N e^{\beta s} u(t) \quad \text { for all }(t, s) \in \Delta .
$$

As a remarkable subset of $\mathcal{U}_{1}$ we point out the set denoted by $\mathcal{U}_{0}$, defined as the set of all functions $u: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow(0, \infty)$ with the property that there are $N \geq 1$ and $\alpha>0$ such that

$$
e^{\alpha(t-s)} u(s) \leq N u(t) \quad \text { for all }(t, s) \in \Delta .
$$

As examples, we give $u_{1}, u_{2}, u_{3}: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow(0, \infty)$ defined by

$$
u_{1}(t)=e^{\frac{3 t}{2+\cos (3 \pi t)}}, \quad u_{2}(t)=e^{\frac{2 t}{1+\{2 t\}}}, \quad u_{3}(t)=e^{2 t}
$$

where $\{t\}$ denotes the fractional part of $t$.
It is easy to see that $u_{1} \in \mathcal{U}_{1} \backslash \mathcal{U}_{0}$ (with $N=\alpha=1, \beta=2$ ), $u_{2} \in \mathcal{U}_{1} \backslash \mathcal{U}_{0}$ (with $N=\alpha=\beta=1$ and $u_{3} \in \mathcal{U}_{0}$ (with $N=\alpha=1$ ).

An example of a dichotomic pair $(U, P)$ with $P \in \mathcal{P}$ is presented by the following example.

Example 1. Let $X=l^{\infty}$ the Banach space of all bounded real-valued sequences, endowed with the norm

$$
\|x\|=\sup _{n \geq 0}\left|x_{n}\right|, \quad \text { where } x=\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, \ldots\right) \in X
$$

For every nondecreasing function $p: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{+}$we define $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ by

$$
P(t) x=\left(x_{0}+p(t) x_{1}, 0, x_{2}+p(t) x_{3}, 0, \ldots\right)
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and $x=\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots\right) \in X$.
Then $P$ is a family of projections which belongs to $\mathcal{P}$ and its complementary is given by

$$
Q(t) x=\left(-p(t) x_{1}, x_{1},-p(t) x_{3}, x_{3}, \ldots\right) .
$$

Moreover, for all $(t, s, x) \in T$ we have

$$
\|P(t)\|=1+p(t) \quad \text { and } \quad\|Q(s) x\|=\max \{1, p(s)\} \sup _{n \geq 0}\left|x_{2 n+1}\right| \leq\|Q(t) x\|
$$

In particular:

- for $p(t)=e^{t}-1$ we have that $P$ is exponentially bounded;
- for $p(t)=e^{t^{2}}-1$ it results that $P$ is not exponentially bounded.

For every $u: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow(0, \infty)$ we define $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ by

$$
U(t, s)=\frac{u(s)}{u(t)} P(s)+\frac{u(t)}{u(s)} Q(t)
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$ where $Q$ is the complementary family of $P$.
It is easy to verify that $(U, P)$ is a dichotomic pair and the skew-evolution operator associated to $(U, P)$ is given by

$$
V(t, s) Q(t)=\frac{u(s)}{u(t)} Q(s) \quad \text { for }(t, s) \in \Delta
$$

Moreover
$U(t, s) P(s)=\frac{u(s)}{u(t)} P(s) \quad$ and $\quad U(t, s) Q(s)=\frac{u(t)}{u(s)} Q(t) \quad$ for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
By Definitions 5, 6, 7, in the particular case of the above defined dichotomic pair $(U, P)$, we obtain the following conclusions:
(i) $(U, P)$ is e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{1}$;
(ii) $(U, P)$ is u.e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{0}$;
(iii) $(U, P)$ is s.e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{1}$ and $P$ is exponentially bounded;
(iv) $(U, P)$ is u.s.e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{0}$ and $P$ is bounded;
(v) $(U, P)$ is w.e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{1}$;
(vi) $(U, P)$ is u.w.e.d if and only if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{0}$;

From these characterizations we obtain, with the aid of functions $u$ and $p$ from the definition of $(U, P)$, that
(vii) if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{1} \backslash \mathcal{U}_{0}$ then $(U, P)$ is e.d (hence also w.e.d) although $(U, P)$ is not u.w.e.d (hence not u.e.d). Thus we obtain that e.d $\nRightarrow$ u.e.d and w.e.d $\nRightarrow$ u.w.e.d;
(viii) if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{0}$ and $P$ is not exponentially bounded (for example, if $p(t)=$ $e^{t^{2}}-1$ ) then $(U, P)$ is u.e.d (hence e.d) but $(U, P)$ is not s.e.d (hence not u.s.e.d). Thus we have that e.d $\nRightarrow$ s.e.d and u.e.d $\nRightarrow$ u.s.e.d;
(ix) if $u \in \mathcal{U}_{1} \backslash \mathcal{U}_{0}$ and $P$ is exponentially bounded and not bounded then $(U, P)$ is s.e.d and it is not u.s.e.d. Hence s.e.d $\nRightarrow$ u.s.e.d;
(x) for $u=u_{1} \in \mathcal{U}_{1}$, with $\beta=2 \notin[0, \alpha)=[0,1)$, we have that $(U, P)$ is e.d with

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\|U(t, s) P(s) x\|=0 \quad \text { and } \quad \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\|=\infty
$$

for every $x \in X$ with $Q(s) x \neq 0$. Thus, it results that the condition $\beta \in[0, \alpha)$ is not necessary for the validity of Corollary 1.

Example 2. Let $u, v: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow(0, \infty)$ be two nondecreasing functions such that there exist $N \geq 1, \alpha>0$ and $\gamma>0$ with the following properties:

$$
N u(t) \geq e^{\alpha(t-s)} u(s) \quad \text { and } \quad v(t) \geq e^{\gamma t^{2}}
$$

for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$.
On $X=l^{\infty}$, the Banach space of bounded real-valued sequences endowed with the sup-norm, we consider the family of projections $P: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ defined by $P(s) x=y$, where $x=\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, \ldots\right)$ and $y=\left(y_{0}, y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}, \ldots\right)$ with

$$
y_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
x_{n}, \quad n=3 k \\
0, \quad \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

The complementary family of $P$ is given by $Q(s) x=z=\left(z_{0}, z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n}, \ldots\right)$ with

$$
z_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0, \quad n=3 k \\
x_{n}, \quad \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

Consider $U: \Delta \rightarrow \mathcal{B}(X)$ defined by $U(t, s) x=w=\left(w_{0}, w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n}, \ldots\right)$, where

$$
w_{n}= \begin{cases}\frac{u(s)}{u(t)} x_{n}, & n=3 k \\ \frac{u(t)}{u(s)} x_{n}, & n=3 k+1 \\ \frac{v(s)}{v(t)} x_{n}, & n=3 k+2\end{cases}
$$

It is easy to check that $P$ is compatible with $U$. Moreover, for all $(t, s, x) \in T$ we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|U(t, s) P(s) x\|=\frac{u(s)}{u(t)}\|P(s) x\| \leq N e^{-\alpha(t-s)}\|P(s) x\| \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\|U(t, s) Q(s) x\| & =\sup _{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left\{\frac{u(t)}{u(s)}\left|x_{3 n+1}\right|, \frac{v(s)}{v(t)}\left|x_{3 n+2}\right|\right\} \leq \\
& \leq \max _{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left\{\frac{u(t)}{u(s)}, \frac{v(s)}{v(t)}\right\}\|Q(s) x\|=\frac{u(t)}{u(s)}\|Q(s) x\| \tag{2}
\end{align*}
$$

By choosing $x^{\prime}=\left(x_{0}^{\prime}, x_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, x_{n}^{\prime}, \ldots\right)$ with

$$
x_{n}^{\prime}= \begin{cases}0, & n=3 k \\ 1, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

we have that

$$
\left\|U(t, s) Q(s) x^{\prime}\right\|=\frac{u(t)}{u(s)}\left\|Q(s) x^{\prime}\right\|
$$

hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|U(t, s) Q(s)\|=\frac{u(t)}{u(s)}\|Q(s)\| \geq \frac{1}{N} e^{\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(s)\| \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

From relations (1) and (3) we have that the pair $(U, P)$ satisfies the conditions ( $w e d_{1}^{\prime}$ ) and ( $w e d_{2}^{\prime}$ ) from Open Problem 2. Taking into account that $P$ is bounded, from (1) and (3) we get that for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|U(t, s) P(s)\| \leq N e^{-\alpha(t-s)} \quad \text { and } \quad\|U(t, s) Q(s)\| \geq \frac{1}{N} e^{\alpha(t-s)} \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence the pair $(U, P)$ satisfies the conditions $\left(\operatorname{sed}_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ and ( $\left.\operatorname{sed}_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ from Proposition 1.

On the other hand, for $(t, s, x) \in T$ we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|V(t, s) Q(t) x\|=\sup _{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left\{\frac{u(s)}{u(t)}\left|x_{3 n+1}\right|, \frac{v(t)}{v(s)}\left|x_{3 n+2}\right|\right\} \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume by a contradiction that the pair $(U, P)$ is w.e.d. Then there exist $\alpha>0, \beta \geq 0$ and $N \geq 1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \leq N e^{\beta t} e^{-\alpha(t-s)}\|Q(t)\|=N e^{\beta t} e^{-\alpha(t-s)} \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

By choosing $x_{0}=(0,0,1,0,0,1, \ldots) \in X$ with $\left\|Q(t) x_{0}\right\|=1$ we get from (5) that for all $(t, s) \in \Delta$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|V(t, s) Q(t)\| \geq \frac{v(t)}{v(s)} \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (6) and (7), by taking $s=0$, we obtain the contradiction

$$
e^{\gamma t^{2}} \leq v(t) \leq v(0) N e^{(\beta-\alpha) t}, \quad \text { for all } t \geq 0
$$

Hence the pair $(U, P)$ is not w.e.d and by Theorem 3 it is not s.e.d.
Acknowledgement. The work of the first author was supported by a grant of the Romanian National Authority for Scientific Research, CNCS UEFISCDI, project number PN-II-RU-TE-2011-3-0103.

## References

[1] M.-G. Babuţia, T. Ceauşu, N. M. Seimeanu, On uniform exponential dichotomy of evolution operators, An. Univ. Vest Timiş. Ser. Mat.-Inform. 50 , issue 2 , (2012), $3-14$.
[2] M.-G. Babuţia, M. Megan, I.-L. Popa, On (h,k)-dichotomies for nonautonomous linear difference equations in Banach spaces, International Journal of Differential Equations (2013), Article ID 761680, http://dx.doi.org/10.1155/2013/761680.
[3] M.-G. Babuţia, M. I. Kovacs, M. Lăpadat, M. Megan, Discrete $(h, k)$-dichotomy and remarks on the boundedness of the projections, Journal of Operators (2014), Article ID 196345, http://dx.doi.org/10.1155/2014/196345.
[4] L. Barreira, Ya. B. Pesin, Lyapunov exponents and Smooth Ergodic Theory, Univ. Lecture Se., vol. 23, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence RI, 2002.
[5] L. Barreira, C. Valls, Stability of Nonautonomous Differential Equations, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, 1926, Springer, Berlin, 2008.
[6] L. Barreira, C. Valls, Robustness of nonuniform exponential dichotomies in Banach spaces, J. Differ. Equations 244 (2008), 2407 2447.
[7] L. Barreira, C. Valls, Quadratic Lyapunov functions for nonuniform exponential dichotomies, J. Differ. Equations 246 (2009), 1235 - 1263.
[8] L. Barreira, C. Valls, Nonuniform exponential dichotomies and admissibility, Discrete Cont. Dyn. Syst. 30 (2011), 39 - 53.
[9] A. J. G. Bento, C. M. Silva, Nonuniform dichotomic behavior: Lipschitz invariant manifolds for ODEs, Bull. Sci. Math. 13 (2013), 89 - 109.
[10] A. J. G. Bento, C. M. Silva, Generalized nonuniform dichotomies and local stable manifolds, J. Dyn. Diff. Equat. (2013), 25:1139-1158.
[11] C. Chicone, Y. Latushkin, Evolution Semigroups in Dynamical Systems and Differential Equations, Math. Surveys and Monographs 70, Amer. Math. Soc., 1999.
[12] J. L. Daleckii, M. G. Krein, Stability of Solutions of Differential Equations in Banach Spaces, Trans. Math. Monographs, vol. 43, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, R. I., 1974.
[13] N. Thieu Huy, Exponential dichotomous operators and exponential dichotomy of evolution operators on the half-line, Integr. Equat. Oper. Th. 48 (2004), $497-510$.
[14] Y. Latushkin, T. Randolph, R. Schnaubelt, Exponential dichotomy and mild solutions of nonautonomous equations in Banach space, J. Dyna. Differential Equations 10 (1998), 489 - 509.
[15] J. L. Massera, J. J. Schäffer, Linear Differential Equations and Function Spaces, Academic Press, New-York, 1966.
[16] M. Megan, On $(h, k)$-dichotomy of evolution operators in Banach spaces, Dyn. Syst. Appl. 5 (1996), 189 - 196.
[17] M. Megan, N. Lupa, Exponential dichotomies of evolution operators in Banach spaces, Monatsh. Math., DOI: 10.1007/s 0065-013-0517-y.
[18] M. Megan, A. L. Sasu, B. Sasu, Discrete admissibility and exponential dichotomy for evolution families, Discrete Cont. Dyn. Systems 9 (2003), $383-397$.
[19] M. Megan, B. Sasu, A. L. Sasu, On nonuniform exponential dichotomy of evolution operators in Banach spaces, Integr. Equat. Oper. Th. 44 (2002), $71-78$.
[20] M. Megan, A. L. Sasu, B. Sasu, The Asymptotic Behavior of Evolution Families, Mirton Publishing House, 2003.
[21] M. Megan, T. Ceauşu, M. A. Tomescu, On exponential stability of variational nonautonomous difference equations in Banach spaces, Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci. Ser. Math. Appl. 4, (1) (2012), $20-31$.
[22] M. Megan, C. Stoica, Concepts of dichotomy for skew-evolution semiflows on Banach spaces, Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci. Ser. Math. Appl. 2 (3) (2010), $125-140$.
[23] N. Van Minh, F. Räbiger, R. Schnaubelt, Exponential stability, exponential expansiveness and exponential dichotomy of evolution equations on the half-line, Integr. Equat. Oper. Th. 32 (1998), 332 - 353.
[24] O. Perron, Die stabilitätsfrage bei Differenzialgleischungen, Math. Z. 32 (1930), $703-728$.
[25] I.-L. Popa, M. Megan, T. Ceauşu, Exponential dichotomies for linear difference systems in Banach spaces, Appl. Anal. Discrete Math. 6 (2012), $140-155$.
[26] I.-L. Popa, M. Megan, T. Ceauşu, Nonuniform exponential dichotomies in terms of Lyapunov functions for noninvertible linear discrete-time systems, The Scientific World Journal, (2013), Article ID 901026.
[27] L. H. Popescu, Exponential dichotomy roughness on Banach spaces, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 314 (2006), 436 - 454.
[28] P. Preda, M. Megan, Nonuniform dichotomy of evolutionary processes in Banach spaces, Bull. Austral. Math. Soc. 27 (1983), $31-52$.
[29] P. Preda, M. Megan, Exponential dichotomy of evolutionary processes in Banach spaces, Czech. Math. J. 35 (1985), 321 - 323.
[30] A. L. Sasu, M.-G. Babuţia, B. Sasu, Admissibility and nonuniform exponential dichotomy on the half-line, Bull. Sci. Math. 137 (2013) 466-484.
[31] A. L. Sasu, B. Sasu, Integral equations, dichotomy of evolution families on the half-line and applications, Integr. Equat. Oper. Th. 66 (2010), 113-140.
[32] B. Sasu, Uniform dichotomy and exponential dichotomy of evolution families on the half-line, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 323 (2006), 1465-1478.
[33] B. Sasu, A. L. Sasu, On the dichotomic behavior of discrete dynamical systems on the half-line, Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst. 33 (2013), 3057 3084.
[34] J. Zhang, X. Chang, J. Wang, Existence and robustness of nonuniform ( $h ; k ; \mu ; \nu$ )-dichotomies for nonautonomous impulsive differential equations, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 400 (2013), Issue 2, 710 - 723.
[35] J. Zhang, Y. Song, Z. Zhao, General exponential dichotomies on time scales and parameter dependence of roughness, Adv. Differ. Equ-Ny, 2013: 339 .

# EXISTENCE AND UNIQUENESS OF <br> THE SOLUTION FOR THE COAGULATION-FRAGMENTATION EQUATION OF WATER DROPS IN FALL* 

Wahida Kaidouchi ${ }^{\dagger} \quad$ Nesrine Kamouche ${ }^{\ddagger}$<br>Mohamed Zine Aissaoui ${ }^{\text {§ }}$


#### Abstract

We consider the integro-differential equation, which describes the fall and the coagulation-fragmentation process of the droplets. By constructing the approximate solutions, which are constituted by families of piece-wise analytic functions, and verifying their convergence, we prove the existence and the uniqueness of the local solution.


MSC: 35R09, 35L60.
keywords: Integro-differential equations, coagulation-fragmentation of drops, fall of drops, analytic solution.

[^1]
## 1 Introduction

As it is commonly known by meteorologists (see eg [12]), the water droplets in the atmosphere fall with different velocities, (mainly determined by the mass of each droplet) and contemporarily undergo the coagulation and fragmentation process. There are several works in the mathematical description of these process we cite here a few. The coagulation process was given by Smoluchowski [14] and Müller [11], the equation of the coagulationfragmentation process has been studied by Melzak [9]. When the equation of droplets which move and undergo the coagulation process, in [7], Galkin proved the existence and the uniqueness of the solution (see also [4], [8]). Also, in 2001 Dubovskii [3], demonstrated the existence and the uniqueness of the global solution of the displacement and coagulation-fragmentation equation of the droplets. To construct the solution, Dubovskii similarly to Galkin used an essential way "the maximum principale" to control the norm $L^{\infty}$ of the solution.

In this work, we consider the equation of droplets which fall in the air and undergo the coagulation-fragmentation process as in Dubovskii's work [3]. But to construct the solution, instead of following the time $t \geq 0$, we follow the trajectories of droplets and their position $z \leq 0$, which permit us to remove a condition posed in [3] (it's about the condition (33) in [3]) on the velocity of droplets $u(m)$ which can lead to the relation $\frac{d u(m)}{d m} \geq \mathrm{cm}^{\alpha}$, $\alpha>0$ (see in [3] the formula (38) and it's comments). Indeed, it seems that this condition can be difficult to achieve in the case of droplets in the atmosphere. More precisely, denoting by $\sigma(m, t, z)$ the density of liquid water contained in the droplets of mass $m$ at time $t$ and in position $z$, we consider the equation with the entry condition $\sigma(m, t, 0)=\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, t)$ and prove the existence and the uniqueness of the local solution (i.e in a domain $-L<z \leq 0$ ). To do this, using the Melzak's method [9], we construct approximate solutions, consisting of analytic functions in $s=-z$ in each interval $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right], \nu=0,1,2, \cdots ; N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, and prove their convergence to the solution of the equation.

The density $\sigma(m, t, z)$ of water liquid is a density with respect to the unit volume of the air containing possible droplets. The equation can be written with respect to the number (in the purely statistical sense) $\tilde{n}(m, t, z)$ of droplets that Dubovskii and Galkin use in their works. We see clearly that the density $\sigma(m, t, z)$ and the number $\tilde{n}(m, t, z)$ are connected by the relation $\tilde{n}(m, t, z)=\frac{\sigma(m, t, z)}{m}$.

We will use the density $\sigma(m, t, z)$ to be conform with the symbolism of
[2], [10] and the known literature of general modeling of weather phenomena ([1], [5], [6], [13]).

## 2 Position of the problem

We suppose that the drops undergo the coagulation and the fragmentation process and in the same time move in the air by the gravitational force while undergoing also the friction effect with surrounding air. In this situation, we can formulate the coagulation-fragmentation process as Melzak's equation ([9]) and the displacement of drops by a velocity given by the friction coefficient between the drops and the air, as the meteorologists commonly use it (see for example [12]). These considerations lead us to the equation (see[1], [2], [10] , [13])

$$
\begin{gather*}
\partial_{t} \sigma(m, t, z)+\partial_{z}(\sigma(m, t, z) u(m))=  \tag{1}\\
=\frac{m}{2} \int_{0}^{m} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \sigma\left(m^{\prime}, t, z\right) \sigma\left(m-m^{\prime}, t, z\right) d m^{\prime}+ \\
-m \int_{0}^{\infty} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \sigma(m, t, z) \sigma\left(m^{\prime}, t, z\right) d m^{\prime}-\frac{m}{2} \sigma(m, t, z) \int_{0}^{m} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime}+ \\
+m \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \sigma\left(m+m^{\prime}, t, z\right) d m^{\prime}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\beta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)$ represents the probability of meeting between two drops of mass $m_{1}, m_{2}$ respectively whereas $\vartheta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)$ is the probability of fragmentation of a droplet of mass $m=m_{1}+m_{2}$ into one of mass $m_{1}$ and another one of mass $m_{2}$. In addition, $u(m)$ indicate the velocity of drops with mass $m$. The equation (1) will be considered for $(m, t, z) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[-L, 0]$ with $L>0$ or possibly in $\left.\left.\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times\right]-\infty, 0\right]$ and with the entry condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(m, t, 0)=\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, t) . \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The functions $\beta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)$ and $\vartheta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)$, according to their physical nature, are supposed

$$
\begin{gather*}
\beta(\cdot, \cdot) \in C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}\right), \quad \beta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right) \geq 0 \quad \forall\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}_{+},  \tag{3}\\
\vartheta(\cdot, \cdot) \in C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}\right), \quad \vartheta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right) \geq 0 \forall\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}_{+},  \tag{4}\\
\beta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)=\beta\left(m_{2}, m_{1}\right), \quad \vartheta\left(m_{1}, m_{2}\right)=\vartheta\left(m_{2}, m_{1}\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

and we admit that $u(m)$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(m)=-\frac{g}{\alpha(m)} \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g$ is a positive constant representing the gravitational acceleration and $\alpha(m)$ is the friction coefficient between drops and air. The relation (5) corresponds, in a good approximation, to the real velocity of drops in the atmosphere (see for example [1], [13]).

For the convenience of presentation, we will use the notation

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(m):=-u(m) \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $w(m)>0$ for all $m>0$. For $w(m)$ we suppose that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
w(\cdot) \in C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}\right), \quad 0<w\left(m_{1}\right) \leq w\left(m_{2}\right) \quad \text { si } \quad 0<m_{1} \leq m_{2} \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

the growth of the function $w(m)$ corresponds to the phenomena observed in nature (see for example [12]).

Moreover, we suppose that there exists a positive constant $C_{0}<\infty$ such that:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, m^{\prime} \in[0, m]} \frac{m}{w(m)} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \leq C_{0},  \tag{8}\\
\sup _{m, m^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \frac{m}{w(m)} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \leq C_{0},  \tag{9}\\
\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{m} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime} \leq C_{0},  \tag{10}\\
\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \int_{0}^{m} \frac{m^{\prime}}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime} \leq C_{0},  \tag{11}\\
\sup _{m, m^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \frac{m}{w(m)} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \leq C_{0} . \tag{12}
\end{gather*}
$$

It is clear that, if $\frac{m}{w(m)}$ is an increasing function of $m$, then the conditions (8) and (10) imply (9) and (11). The conditions on the function $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, t)$ will be specified in the following paragraphs (see (23), (71)-(72)).

## 3 Preliminaries - characteristics and description on them

To solve the equation (1) with conditions (2), firstly we define the family of characteristics $\chi_{m, \tilde{t}}$ by the equations system

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d z(s)}{d s}=-1  \tag{13}\\
\frac{d t(s)}{d s}=\frac{1}{w(m)}
\end{array}\right.
$$

with the initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
z(0)=0, \quad t(0)=\tilde{t} \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The characteristics $\chi_{m, \tilde{t}}$ as defined have, in the space $\left.\left.\mathbb{R} \times\right]-\infty, 0\right]$, the expression:

$$
\left.\chi_{m, \tilde{t}}=\{(t, z) \in \mathbb{R} \times]-\infty, 0\right] \left\lvert\, t=\tilde{t}+\frac{s}{w(m)}\right., z=-s, s \in[0, \infty[ \}
$$

In the following, we will use the coordinates $(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}$and $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ instead of $\left.\left.\sigma(m, t, z) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times\right]-\infty, 0\right]$ and $\sigma(m, t, z)$ when $t=\tilde{t}+\frac{s}{w(m)}$ and $z=-s$.

Now we introduce, for each fixed $s \geq 0$, the curves family given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{q s}=\left\{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \left\lvert\, \tilde{t}=q-\frac{s}{w(m)}\right.\right\}, \quad q \in \mathbb{R} \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

The curve $\gamma_{q s}$ is none other than the set of points $(m, \tilde{t})$ (on the half-plane $\{z=-s\})$ such as the characteristics $\chi_{m, \tilde{t}}$ passes by the point $t=q, z=-s$ on the plan $(t, z)$.

In a similar way to [10] and [2] we define a measure $\mu_{\gamma}=\mu_{\gamma_{q s}}$ on the curves $\gamma_{q s}$ by $P_{\mathbb{R}_{+}}$the projection of $\gamma_{q s}$ on $\mathbb{R}_{+}(\ni m)$, i.e. by the relations:
i) $A^{\prime} \subset \gamma_{q s}$ is measurable if and only if $P_{\mathbb{R}_{+}} A^{\prime}$ is measurable according to Lebesgue on $\mathbb{R}_{+}$,
ii) $\mu_{\gamma}\left(A^{\prime}\right)=\mu_{L, \mathbb{R}_{+}}\left(P_{\mathbb{R}_{+}} A^{\prime}\right)$, where $\mu_{L, \mathbb{R}_{+}}(\cdot)$ is the Lebesgue's measure on $\mathbb{R}_{+}$.

The measure $\mu_{\gamma_{q s}}(\cdot)$ enjoys a suitable properties for the calculus of integrals on the curves $\gamma_{q s}$ (for more details, see [10]).

In particular, we recall that, if $\varphi$ and $\psi$ are two functions belonging to $L^{1}\left(\gamma_{q s}, \mu_{\gamma_{q s}}\right)$, then we have $\varphi * \psi \in L^{1}\left(\gamma_{q s}, \mu_{\gamma_{q s}}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\varphi * \psi\|_{L^{1}\left(\gamma_{q s}, \mu_{\gamma_{q}}\right)} \leq\|\varphi\|_{L^{1}\left(\gamma_{q s}, \mu_{\gamma_{q s}}\right)}\|\psi\|_{L^{1}\left(\gamma_{q s}, \mu_{\gamma_{q}}\right)} \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
(\varphi * \psi)(m)=\int_{\gamma_{q s}} \varphi\left(m-m^{\prime}\right) \psi\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma_{q s}}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)
$$

Let $\varphi(\cdot, \cdot)$ be a measurable function defined on $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$. We put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\{\varphi\}_{q s}(m)=\varphi\left(m, q-\frac{s}{w(m)}\right) \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

which represents the values of $\varphi(m, \tilde{t})$ on the curve $\gamma_{q s}$ expressed according to $m$. Moreover, $\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}$ designate the curve $\gamma_{q s}$ with $q=\tilde{t}+\frac{s}{w(m)}$. It is clear that, the curve $\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}$ passes by the point $(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ and that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}=\left\{\left(m^{\prime}, \tilde{t}^{\prime}\right) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \left\lvert\, \tilde{t}^{\prime}=\tilde{t}+\frac{s}{w(m)}-\frac{s}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)}\right.\right\} \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}^{[0, m]}$ be defined as:

$$
\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}^{[0, m]}=\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})} \cap([0, m] \times \mathbb{R}) .
$$

Now, we define the operators $K_{\gamma_{g s}}[\varphi, \psi]$ and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi]$ as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi, \psi](m, \tilde{t})=\frac{1}{2} \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}^{[0, m]}} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right)\{\varphi\}_{q s}\left(m-m^{\prime}\right)\{\psi\}_{q s}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+ \\
&-\frac{1}{2} \varphi(m, \tilde{t}) \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\psi\}_{q s}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+  \tag{19}\\
&-\frac{1}{2} \psi(m, \tilde{t}) \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\varphi\}_{q s}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) \\
& L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi](m, \tilde{t})=-\frac{1}{2} \varphi(m, \tilde{t}) \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}^{[0, m]}} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+  \tag{20}\\
&+\int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\varphi\}_{q s}\left(m+m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

provided that all the integrals in the right sides are well defined. From these relations, it results that $K_{\gamma_{q}}[\varphi, \psi]$ is a symmetric, bilinear operator and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi]$ is a linear operator. If $\varphi(m, \tilde{t})$ and $\psi(m, \tilde{t})$ are continuous, $K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi, \psi](m, \tilde{t})$ and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi](m, \tilde{t})$ are too .

The operators $K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot]$ being defined, we can transform the equation (1) to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})\right) \tag{21}
\end{equation*}
$$

in the coordinates $(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ defined above. The equation (21) will be considered with the condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, 0)=\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t}) \tag{22}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the transcription of the condition (2) in the coordinates $(m, \tilde{t}, s)$. We suppose that $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})$ is continuous in $(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$ and that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq \bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t}), \quad \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}} \bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})<\infty, \quad \sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t}) d m<\infty \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the case where $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})$ depends on $\tilde{t}$, we need to construct a sequence of approximate solutions. Indeed, for each $N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, we introduce the partition of $\mathbb{R}_{+}$into $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}[, \nu=0,1,2, \cdots\right.$, and we consider the approximate equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{\nu}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})\right) \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

for

$$
\bar{s}_{\nu}=\frac{\nu}{N} \leq s<\frac{\nu+1}{N}, \quad \nu=0,1,2, \cdots
$$

Remark 1. In $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\left[\right.\right.$ the curves family $\left\{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{\nu}\right\}_{q \in \mathbb{R}}$ is fixed and does not depend on $s$. By solving (24) for $0 \leq s<\frac{1}{N}$ with the condition (22) and using, if possible, $\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{1}{N}\right)$ as entry condition of the equation (24) for $\frac{1}{N} \leq$ $s<\frac{2}{N}$, we will be solving it in $\left[\frac{1}{N}, \frac{2}{N}[\right.$; by repeating this procedure for $\nu=$ $0,1,2, \cdots$, we construct the approximate solution $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$.

Before examining the equation (21) or (24), we recall the inequalities concerning the operators $K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot]$.

Lemma 1. For all $s \geq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi, \psi](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq  \tag{25}\\
\leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{4}\left[\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}|\varphi(m, \tilde{t})| \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}}\left|\{\psi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)+\right.
\end{gather*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left.+\sup _{\left(m, \tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}\right.}|\psi(m, \tilde{t})| \int_{\gamma_{q s(m, \tilde{t})}}\left|\{\varphi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)\right], \\
\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|\left\{K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi, \psi]\right\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq  \tag{26}\\
\leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}}\left|\{\varphi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \int_{\gamma_{q s}}\left|\{\psi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \\
\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq  \tag{27}\\
\leq C_{0}\left[\frac{1}{2} \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}|\varphi(m, \tilde{t})|+\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}}\left|\{\varphi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)\right], \\
\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|\left\{L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi]\right\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq  \tag{28}\\
\leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}}\left|\{\varphi\}_{q s}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) .
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. The inequalities (25) and (27) result immediately from the definition (19) and (20) of operators $K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ and $L_{\gamma_{q s}}[\cdot]$ and the conditions (8)-(10), (12). On the other hand, the inequality (26) results from relations (19), (8), (9) and the property of the convolution (16).

Last, let's use the change of variables $m^{\prime \prime}=m+m^{\prime}$. Hence, for any fixed arbitrary curve $\gamma_{q s}$, we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{\gamma_{q s}} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\gamma_{q s}} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\varphi\}_{q s}\left(m+m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}(d m)=  \tag{29}\\
= & \int_{\gamma_{q s}} \int_{\gamma_{q s}^{\left[0, m^{\prime \prime}\right]}} \frac{m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}}{w\left(m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}\right)} \vartheta\left(m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)\{\varphi\}_{q s}\left(m^{\prime \prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime \prime}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Thus, taking into account the conditions (11), (12), we deduce from the definition (20) of the operator $L_{\gamma_{g s}}[\cdot]$ the inequality (28).

## 4 Local solution of the approximate equation

In this paragraph and in the following one, we consider the equation (24)

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{\nu}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{\nu}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})\right)
$$

for $s \geq \bar{s}_{\nu}=\frac{\nu}{N}$ with the condition

$$
\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{\nu}{N}\right)=\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t}),
$$

by considering $\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t})$ as a given function.
As the curves $\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}$ depend only on $q$, we use the simplified notation for this problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{q}=\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}, \quad \gamma_{q(m, \tilde{t})}=\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t})}, \quad\{\varphi\}_{q}=\{\varphi\}_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}} . \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

It would be enough to consider the equation in the interval $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}[\right.$, but it will be more convenient to consider it in the interval $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \infty[\right.$. Still to simplify the writing, we use the change of variables $s^{\prime}=s-\frac{\nu}{N}$, to get $[0, \infty[$ and we write $s$ instead of $s^{\prime}$. by these writing conventions, we can write the problem in the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})\right)  \tag{32}\\
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, 0)=\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t}) \tag{31}
\end{gather*}
$$

Consider the integrate form of the latter equation:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t}) & +\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right. \\
& \left.+L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We suppose that for each $(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$ the function $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is analytic in $s$, i.e. there exist the functions $a_{k}(m, \tilde{t}), k \in \mathbb{N}$, such as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k}(m, \tilde{t}) s^{k} . \tag{33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus,

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}(k+1) a_{k+1}(m, \tilde{t}) s^{k} .
$$

We recall the definitions (19), (20), and by equalizing the terms having the same power of $s$, we deduce from the equality (31) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{k+1}(m, \tilde{t})=\frac{m}{w(m)} \frac{1}{k+1}\left(\sum_{i+j=k} K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[a_{i}, a_{j}\right](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[a_{k}\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) \tag{34}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $k=0,1,2, \cdots$.

Lemma 2. We suppose that $\beta(\cdot, \cdot), \vartheta(\cdot, \cdot)$ and $w(\cdot)$ satisfy the conditions mentioned in paragraph 2 , and that $\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t})$ is continuous in $(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$ and satisfy the conditions

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left\{\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}\right\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \equiv A_{0}<\infty  \tag{35}\\
\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}} \bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t}) \equiv B_{0}<\infty \tag{36}
\end{gather*}
$$

Then, there exists a positive constant $C_{0}<\infty$ such as the power-series of the second member of (33) converges in the interval $\left[0, \frac{1}{M}[\right.$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=C_{0}\left(\frac{3}{2}\left(A_{0}+1\right)+\frac{A_{0}}{B_{0}}\right) \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We put

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{k}=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{a_{k}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \quad B_{k}=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}\left|a_{k}(m, \tilde{t})\right| \tag{38}
\end{equation*}
$$

We recall that, according to (32), the values of $A_{0}$ and $B_{0}$ given by (35) and (36) coincide with those given by (38).

By (26), (28) and (34) we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{a_{k+1}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \\
\leq \frac{1}{k+1} \int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(\sum_{i+j=k}\left|\left\{K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[a_{i}, a_{j}\right]\right\}_{q}(m)\right|+\left|\left\{L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[a_{k}\right]\right\}_{q}(m)\right|\right) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \\
\leq \frac{1}{k+1} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(\sum_{i+j=k} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{a_{i}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{a_{j}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)+\right. \\
\left.+\int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{a_{k}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

We deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{k+1} \leq \frac{1}{k+1} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(\sum_{i+j=k} A_{i} A_{j}+A_{k}\right) \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, according to (25), (27), (34), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{k+1} \leq \frac{C_{0}}{k+1}\left(\frac{3}{2} \sum_{i+j=k} A_{i} B_{j}+\frac{1}{2} B_{k}+A_{k}\right) \tag{40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we will prove by induction that the inequalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{k} \leq A_{0} M^{k}, \quad B_{k} \leq B_{0} M^{k} \quad \forall k \in \mathbb{N}, \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

hold, where $M$ is defined in (37).
For $k=0$ the inequalities (41) hold. Moreover, we suppose that they are verified for every $k \leq n$, and substitue the estimates of $A_{k}$ and $B_{k}$ in (39) and (40) respectively, we get:

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{k+1} & \leq \frac{1}{k+1} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} A_{0} M^{k}\left((k+1) A_{0}+1\right), \\
B_{k+1} & \leq \frac{C_{0}}{k+1} B_{0} M^{k}\left(\frac{3}{2}(k+1) A_{0}+\frac{1}{2}+\frac{A_{0}}{B_{0}}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

which means that

$$
A_{n+1} \leq A_{0} M^{n+1}, \quad B_{n+1} \leq B_{0} M^{n+1}
$$

We conclude that the relation (41) is satisfied for every $k$.
The proved inequalities (41) imply that

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}\left|a_{k}(m, \tilde{t})\right| s^{k} \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} B_{0} M^{k} s^{k} \quad \forall(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}
$$

which means that, if $M s<1$, then the formal power-series of the second member of (33) converges absolutely.

Lemma 3. Let $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ be the solution of the problem (31)-(32) constructed in lemma 2. Then for $0 \leq s<\frac{1}{M}$ we have:

$$
\begin{gathered}
|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)| \leq \frac{B_{0}}{1-M s}, \quad \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \frac{A_{0}}{1-M s}, \\
\left|\frac{\partial \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)}{\partial s}\right| \leq \frac{B_{0} M}{(1-M s)^{2}}, \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\frac{\partial \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)}{\partial s}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \frac{A_{0} M}{(1-M s)^{2}}, \\
\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)}{\partial s^{2}}\right| \leq \frac{2 B_{0} M^{2}}{(1-M s)^{3}}, \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\frac{\partial^{2} \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)}{\partial s^{2}}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \frac{2 A_{0} M^{2}}{(1-M s)^{3}} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Proof. These inequalities result from (33), (38), (41) and elementary calculus.

Lemma 4. Let $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ be the solution of the problem (31)-(32) constructed in lemma 2. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t}) \geq 0 \quad \forall(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

then we have

$$
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s) \geq 0 \quad \text { for } 0 \leq s<\frac{1}{M}
$$

Proof. The lemma is proved in a similar way to Lemma 2 of [9]. Indeed, we choose a number $\tau \in] 0, \frac{1}{M}[$; in the following (see (52)) we will impose a further restriction on $\tau$. We will construct an approximation $G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ $(n \in \mathbb{N})$ of $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ in the interval $0 \leq s<\tau$, putting

$$
\begin{align*}
& G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t}) \quad \text { for } \quad \frac{k \tau}{n} \leq s<\frac{(k+1) \tau}{n}, \quad k=0,1, \cdots, n-1  \tag{43}\\
& g_{0 n}(m, \tilde{t})=\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, 0)=\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t})  \tag{44}\\
& g_{k+1 n}(m, \tilde{t})=g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[g_{k n}, g_{k n}\right](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[g_{k n}\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) \tag{45}
\end{align*}
$$

We put

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{k n}=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{g_{k n}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \quad L_{k n}=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}\left|g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})\right| \tag{46}
\end{equation*}
$$

from (35)-(36) we have

$$
T_{0 n}=A_{0}, \quad L_{0 n}=B_{0}
$$

On the other hand, according to (45) and the inequalities (25)-(28) we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
T_{k+1 n} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\right) T_{k n}+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} T_{k n}^{2} \\
L_{k+1 n} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{C_{0}}{2}\right) L_{k n}+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} L_{k n} T_{k n}+\frac{\tau}{n} C_{0} T_{k n}
\end{gathered}
$$

In particular, if we put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda_{k n}=\max \left(T_{k n}, L_{k n}\right) \tag{47}
\end{equation*}
$$

we get

$$
\begin{gather*}
\Lambda_{0 n}=\max \left(A_{0}, B_{0}\right)  \tag{48}\\
\Lambda_{k+1 n} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\right) \Lambda_{k n}+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \Lambda_{k n}^{2} \tag{49}
\end{gather*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}, \quad \lambda_{k n}=\frac{1}{a} \frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \Lambda_{k n} \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

so, we have

$$
\lambda_{k+1 n} \leq a \lambda_{k n}\left(1+\lambda_{k n}\right)
$$

or, if we define the function $h(x)=a x(1+x)$,

$$
\lambda_{k+1 n} \leq h\left(\lambda_{k n}\right)
$$

and, in the following,

$$
\lambda_{k n} \leq h^{(k)}\left(\lambda_{0 n}\right) \leq h^{(n)}\left(\lambda_{0 n}\right)
$$

Now, it is not difficult to see, by induction on $k=1,2, \ldots$ that

$$
0<h^{(k)}(x) \leq \frac{a^{k} x}{1-\frac{a^{k}-1}{a-1} x}, \quad k=1,2, \ldots
$$

provided that $\frac{a^{k}-1}{a-1} x<1$. So we have

$$
\lambda_{k n} \leq \frac{a^{n} \lambda_{0 n}}{1-\frac{a^{n}-1}{a-1} \lambda_{0 n}}, \quad k=0,1, \cdots, n
$$

provided that $\frac{a^{n}-1}{a-1} \lambda_{0 n}<1$. As

$$
a^{n}=\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\right)^{n} \leq e^{\frac{3 \tau C_{0}}{2}}
$$

returning to the expression of $\Lambda_{k n}$ (see (50)) and taking into account (47)(48) and from the expression of $a$ (see (50)), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left(T_{k n}, L_{k n}\right) \leq \frac{e^{\frac{3 \tau C_{0}}{2}} \max \left(A_{0}, B_{0}\right)}{1-\left(e^{\frac{3 \tau C_{0}}{2}}-1\right) \max \left(A_{0}, B_{0}\right)} \tag{51}
\end{equation*}
$$

provided that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau<\frac{2}{3 C_{0}} \log \left(1+\frac{1}{\max \left(A_{0}, B_{0}\right)}\right) \tag{52}
\end{equation*}
$$

we also note that (52) ensures the condition $\frac{a^{n}-1}{a-1} \lambda_{0 n}<1$.
The inequality (51) (see also (46)) implies that the functions $g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})$ are bounded and integrable on all the curves $\gamma_{q}$. Furthermore, if we recall the formulas (44)-(45) which defined the functions $g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})$, we can see that they are continuous in $(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$.

On the other hand, recalling the explicit expressions of the operators $K_{\gamma_{q}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ and $L_{\gamma_{q}}[\cdot]$ (see (19)-(20)), the definition of functions $g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})$ (see (44)-(45)) and the conditions (3)-(4), imply that, if $g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t}) \geq 0, \forall(m, \tilde{t}) \in$ $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
g_{k+1 n}(m, \tilde{t}) \geq g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t}) & \left(1-\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left[\int_{\gamma_{q(m, \tilde{t})}} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\left\{g_{k n}\right\}_{q}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{1}{2} \int_{\gamma_{q(m, \tilde{t})}^{[0, m]}} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)\right]\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Taking into account the relations (9), (10), (46) and (51), we see that, if $n$ is sufficiently large, then $g_{k+1 n}(m, \tilde{t}) \geq 0$, which means that $g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t}) \geq 0$, $\forall(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}, \forall k=0,1, \cdots, n$, in other terms if $n$ is sufficiently large then

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \geq 0 \quad \forall(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \tau] \tag{53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we examine the difference

$$
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)
$$

in the interval $[0, \tau]$. For this, we pose

$$
\begin{align*}
\alpha_{k}= & \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}, \frac{k \tau}{n} \leq s \leq \frac{(k+1) \tau}{n}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)-G_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)=  \tag{54}\\
= & \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}, \frac{k \tau}{n} \leq s \leq \frac{(k+1) \tau}{n}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)-g_{k n}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \\
\beta_{k}= & \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}, \frac{k \tau}{n} \leq s \leq \frac{(k+1) \tau}{n}}\left|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|=  \tag{55}\\
= & \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}+\times \mathbb{R}, \frac{k \tau}{n} \leq s \leq \frac{(k+1) \tau}{n}}\left|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})\right| .
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (45) in the difference $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})$, and by adding $0=-\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)+\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})=\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)+\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)-g_{k-1 n}(m, \tilde{t})+ \\
-\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[g_{k-1 n}, g_{k-1 n}\right](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[g_{k-1 n}\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) \tag{56}
\end{gather*}
$$

As

$$
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)=\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{\partial \sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)}{\partial s}+\frac{1}{2} \frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}} \frac{\partial^{2} \sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\delta_{1}\right)}{\partial s^{2}}
$$

with $0 \leq \delta_{1} \leq \frac{\tau}{n}$.
By substituting the expression (31) and using the symmetric propriety of $K_{\gamma_{q}}[\varphi, \psi]$ (see (19)) and the linearity of the operator $L_{\gamma_{q}}[\varphi]$ (see (20)), by (56) we deduce that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \quad\left|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-g_{k n}(m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq\left|\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)-g_{k-1 n}(m, \tilde{t})\right|+  \tag{57}\\
& +\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)+g_{k-1 n}, \sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)-g_{k-1 n}\right](m, \tilde{t})\right|+ \\
& +\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)-g_{k-1 n}\right](m, \tilde{t})\right|+\frac{1}{2} \frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}}\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\delta_{1}\right)}{\partial s^{2}}\right| .
\end{align*}
$$

As $0 \leq s \leq \tau$, according to Lemma 3 and from (51) (see also (46)) the terms

$$
\int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)+g_{k-1 n}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \frac{1}{2} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\frac{\partial^{2} \sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s-\delta_{1}\right)}{\partial s^{2}}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m)
$$

are uniformly bounded by some constant, that we denote by $C_{1}$, and according to (26), (28) (see also (54)), we deduce from (57) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{k} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{1}\right)\right) \alpha_{k-1}+\frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}} C_{1} . \tag{58}
\end{equation*}
$$

In a similar way, majoring the terms

$$
\left|\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\frac{\tau}{n}\right)+g_{k-1 n}(m, \tilde{t})\right|, \quad \frac{1}{2}\left|\frac{\partial^{2} \sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, s-\delta_{1}\right)}{\partial s^{2}}\right|
$$

through a constant, that we denote by $C_{2}$, and taking into account (25), (27) (see also (55)), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{k} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} C_{0}\left(\frac{3 C_{1}}{4}+\frac{1}{2}\right)\right) \beta_{k-1}+\frac{\tau}{n} C_{0}\left(\frac{3 C_{2}}{4}+1\right) \alpha_{k-1}+\frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}} C_{2} . \tag{59}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{k}=\max \left(\alpha_{k}, \beta_{k}\right), \quad C_{3}=\max \left(C_{1}, C_{2}\right), \tag{60}
\end{equation*}
$$

then from (58)-(59) we deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{k} \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)\right) \zeta_{k-1}+\frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}} C_{3} \tag{61}
\end{equation*}
$$

By repeating the application of the inequality (61), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\max _{k=1, \cdots, n-1} \zeta_{k} & \leq\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)\right)^{n-1} \zeta_{0}+\frac{\tau^{2}}{n^{2}} C_{3} \sum_{k=0}^{n-2}\left(1+\frac{\tau}{n} \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)\right)^{k} \leq \\
& \leq e^{\tau \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)} \max \left(\alpha_{0}, \beta_{0}\right)+\frac{\tau}{n} C_{3} \frac{e^{\tau \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)}-1}{\frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)} \tag{62}
\end{align*}
$$

As for $\alpha_{0}$ and $\beta_{0}$, from (44), (54), (55) we deduce that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha_{0} \leq & \frac{\tau}{n} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}, 0 \leq s \leq \frac{\tau}{n}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\frac{\partial \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)}{\partial s}\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \\
& \beta_{0} \leq \frac{\tau}{n} \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}, 0 \leq s \leq \frac{\tau}{n}}\left|\frac{\partial \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)}{\partial s}\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, according to lemma 3 there is a constant $C_{4}$ such as

$$
\max \left(\alpha_{0}, \beta_{0}\right) \leq C_{4} \frac{\tau}{n}
$$

that enables us to deduce from (62),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{k=0,1, \cdots, n-1}\left[\max \left(\alpha_{k}, \beta_{k}\right)\right] \leq \frac{\tau}{n}\left[e^{\tau \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)} C_{4}+C_{3} \frac{e^{\tau \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)}-1}{\frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(1+C_{3}\right)}\right] \tag{63}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recalling (55), we see that (63) implies that, for $0 \leq s \leq \tau, G_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ converges uniformly to $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$. Therefore, according to (53), we have $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s) \geq 0 \forall(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \tau]$.

The non-negativity of $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ in $[0, \tau]$ being proved, we construct [ $\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}$ ] (we take $\tau_{1}=0, \tau_{2}=\tau$ ) and, by repeating the procedure, to get the successive intervals $\left[\tau_{n}, \tau_{n+1}\right], n=1,2, \cdots$. In a similar way to (52), which gives the restriction of the choice of $\tau$, we can take $\tau_{n+1}$ such that

$$
\tau_{n+1}-\tau_{n}<\frac{2}{3 C_{0}} \log \left(1+\frac{1}{\max \left(A_{0}^{[n]}, B_{0}^{[n]}\right)}\right)
$$

where
$A_{0}^{[n]}=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, \tau_{n}\right)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \quad B_{0}^{[n]}=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}+\times \mathbb{R}}\left|\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, \tau_{n}\right)\right|$.
The previous Lemma 3 implies that we can construct a sequence of intervals $\left[\tau_{n}, \tau_{n+1}\right], n=0,1, \cdots$, such that

$$
\left[0, \frac{1}{M}\left[\subset \bigcup_{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left[\tau_{n}, \tau_{n+1}\right],\right.\right.
$$

which completes the proof of Lemma.
To summarize things up, we proved the existence of a solution in the interval $\left[0, \frac{1}{M}[\right.$, solution which is analytic in $s$, non-negative, continuous, bounded and integrable on each $\gamma_{q}=\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}, q \in \mathbb{R}$.

## 5 Global solution of the approximate equation

Being established the existence of a local solution, now we will prove that we can extend it on the interval $[0, \infty[$.
Proposition 1. Under the conditions of the lemma 2 and 4 the problem (31)-(32) admits, in the interval $[0, \infty[$, a solution $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$, which is analytic in $s$, continuous, non-negative and integrable on each curve $\gamma_{q}=\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}$.

Proof. the proposition 1 is proved in a similar way to lemma 3 of [9]. More precisely, the first interval is considered $\left[0, D_{1}\right]$ with $D_{1}=\frac{1}{2 M}$, $M=C_{0}\left(\frac{3}{2}\left(A_{0}+1\right)+\frac{A_{0}}{B_{0}}\right)\left(\right.$ see (37)), then successively the intervals $\left[D_{n}, D_{n+1}\right]$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n+1}-D_{n}=\frac{1}{C_{0}\left(3\left(A\left(D_{n}\right)+1\right)+2 \frac{A\left(D_{n}\right)}{B\left(D_{n}\right)}\right)}, \tag{64}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
A(s)=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m), \quad B(s)=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)| .
$$

The lemmas 2, 3 and 4 , reformulated with the initial data $\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, D_{n}\right)$, give the solution in the interval $\left[D_{n}, D_{n+1}\right]$.

We return to equation (31) and integrate it on $\gamma_{q}$. To examine the term $\int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left\{\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)]\right\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m)\right.$ (recall the expression (19)), we note that

$$
\int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{1}{2} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\gamma_{q}^{0, m]}} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}\left(m-m^{\prime}\right)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}\left(m^{\prime}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}(d m)= \\
=\int_{\gamma_{q}} \int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{1}{2} \frac{m+m^{\prime}}{w\left(m+m^{\prime}\right)} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore, according to the symmetry of the function $\beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)$, the condition (7), and the non-negativity of $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left\{K_{\gamma_{q}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)]\right\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m)=\int_{\gamma_{q}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left(\frac{m}{w\left(m+m^{\prime}\right)}-\frac{m}{w(m)}\right) \times \\
\times \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

On one hand, similarly to the proof of (28) (see in particular (29)), and taking account the sign of each term, we deduce from the expression of (20) that

$$
\int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left\{L_{\gamma_{q}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)]\right\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq C_{0} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) .
$$

Using these inequalities, from the integral form of (31), we obtain

$$
\begin{gathered}
A(s)=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \leq \\
\leq \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, 0)\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m)+C_{0} \int_{0}^{s} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left\{\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right\}_{q}(m) \mu_{\gamma}(d m) d s^{\prime},
\end{gathered}
$$

from where it results that

$$
\begin{equation*}
A(s) \leq A(0) e^{C_{0} s} \tag{65}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, according to (19), (20) and from the non-negativity of $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$, we deduce from (31) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s) \geq-\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)\left[\int_{\gamma_{q}} \frac{m}{w(m)} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\{\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)\}_{q}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+\right. \\
&+\frac{1}{2} \int_{\gamma_{q}}[0, m] \\
&\left.\frac{m}{w(m)} \vartheta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

from where, according to conditions (9), (10), we obtain

$$
B(s) \geq B(0)-C_{0} \int_{0}^{s} B\left(s^{\prime}\right)\left(A\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\right) d s^{\prime}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(s) \geq B(0) e^{-C_{0} \int_{0}^{s}\left(A\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\right) d s^{\prime}} \tag{66}
\end{equation*}
$$

The relations (64)-(66) implies that the sequence $\left\{D_{n}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ can't converge to a finite value, i.e. it is necessary that $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} D_{n}=\infty$.

Proposition 2. Under the same hypothesis of the proposition 1, the solution of the problem (31)-(32) is unique in the class $\Phi$ which satisfy the conditions:
i) $\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is continuous in $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}$,
ii) $\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is integrable on each curve $\gamma_{q} \quad(q \in \mathbb{R})$,
iii) for all $\bar{s}_{1} \in\left[0, \infty\left[\right.\right.$, we have $\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}, s \in\left[0, \bar{s}_{1}\right]} \int_{\gamma_{q}} \mid\left\{\varphi(\cdot, \cdot, s\}_{q}(m) \mid \mu_{\gamma}(d m)<\right.$ $\infty$.

Proof. Let $\varphi_{1}$ and $\varphi_{2}$ two solutions of the problem (31)-(32) belonging to the class $\Phi$. As $\varphi_{1}(m, \tilde{t}, 0)-\varphi_{2}(m, \tilde{t}, 0)=0$, using the symmetry of the operator $K_{\gamma_{q}}[\varphi, \psi]$ and the linearity of $L_{\gamma_{q}}[\varphi]$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\varphi_{1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\varphi_{2}(m, \tilde{t}, s)= \\
=\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right]+\right. \\
\left.+L_{\gamma_{q}}\left[\varphi_{1}(\cdot, \cdot, s)-\varphi_{2}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right]\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore, from (26) and (28) we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\varphi_{1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\varphi_{2}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right| \leq  \tag{67}\\
\leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \times \\
\times \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) d s^{\prime}+ \\
+\frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s} \sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gather*}
$$

We choose $\bar{s}_{1}$ such that $\bar{s}_{1}<\infty$. Hence, according to the condition $\left.i i i\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}, s \in\left[0, \bar{s}_{1}\right]} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\varphi_{1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\varphi_{2}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m) \equiv M_{1}<\infty . \tag{68}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, if we put

$$
g(s)=\sup _{q \in \mathbb{R}} \int_{\gamma_{q}}\left|\left\{\varphi_{1}(\cdot, \cdot, s)-\varphi_{2}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q}(m)\right| \mu_{\gamma}(d m),
$$

then it results from (67) that

$$
g(s) \leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2}\left(M_{1}+1\right) \int_{0}^{s} g\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime},
$$

which implies that

$$
g(s)=0 \quad \forall s \in\left[0, \bar{s}_{1}\right]
$$

Or, from $i i i$ ), to have the relation (68), we can choose any $\bar{s}_{1}<\infty$ (even if $M_{1}$ can be different, but always $\left.M_{1}<\infty\right)$, so that, by repeating the same reasoning, we can prove $g(s)=0$ for all $s \in \mathbb{R}_{+}$, which completes the proof.

## 6 Estimates of the approximate solutions

We note that, if $\bar{\sigma}_{\nu}(m, \tilde{t})$ is continuous in $(m, \tilde{t})$ and satisfies the conditions (35), (36) and (42), then from the propositions 1 and 2, there exists a unique solution $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ of the problem (31)-(32) for $\frac{\nu}{N} \leq s<\infty$ (here we return to the initial formulation of the variable $s$ ). Let's put $\bar{\sigma}_{\nu+1}(m, \tilde{t})=\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right)$, it satisfies the conditions (35), (36) and (42), and it is continuous in $(m, \tilde{t})$ so that we can repeat the resolution of the equation for $\frac{\nu+1}{N} \leq s$, with the entry condition $\bar{\sigma}_{\nu+1}(m, \tilde{t})=\sigma\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right)$. Thus, by iterating this procedure on the intervals $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right]$ for $\nu=0,1,2, \cdots$, we construct on $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}$the solution of the equation (24) with the entry condition (22); we indicate this solution by $\sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$. It is useful to recall that this last solution is bounded, continuous in $(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ and non-negative.

To solve the problem (21)-(22) in the field $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \bar{s}]$ with $\bar{s}>0$, we suppose that $w(m)$ satisfies the additional condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\frac{1}{w(m)} \leq \sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \frac{1}{w(m)} \equiv \bar{C}_{w}<\infty \tag{69}
\end{equation*}
$$

and that $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})$ satisfies the condition (23), and the following ones

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int_{0}^{\infty} \sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t}) d m \equiv \bar{\omega}_{0}<\infty  \tag{70}\\
\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}+, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|\bar{\sigma}_{0}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}\right)-\bar{\sigma}_{0}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|} \equiv \bar{\lambda}_{0}<\infty  \tag{71}\\
\int_{0}^{\infty} \sup _{\tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|\bar{\sigma}_{0}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}\right)-\bar{\sigma}_{0}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|} d m \equiv \bar{J}_{0}<\infty \tag{72}
\end{gather*}
$$

In this paragraph, we are interested by some estimates for the values of $\omega^{[N]}(s), \psi^{[N]}(s), J^{[N]}(s)$ and $\lambda^{[N]}(s)$ defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega^{[N]}(s)=\int_{0}^{\infty} u^{[N]}(m, s) d m, \quad u^{[N]}(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \tag{73}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\psi^{[N]}(s)=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}} \sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} u^{[N]}(m, s)  \tag{74}\\
J^{[N]}(s)=\int_{0}^{\infty} j^{[N]}(m, s) d m,  \tag{75}\\
j^{[N]}(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t_{2}} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{\tilde{1}}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, s\right)-\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|} \\
\lambda^{[N]}(s)=\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, s\right)-\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|}=\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} j^{[N]}(m, s) . \tag{76}
\end{gather*}
$$

Lemma 5. For all $N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\omega}(s), \quad \forall s \in\left[0, S_{1}[,\right. \tag{77}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{\omega}(s)=\frac{1}{\left(\frac{1}{\bar{\omega}_{0}}+\frac{1}{2}\right) e^{-C_{0} s}-\frac{1}{2}}, \quad S_{1}=\frac{1}{C_{0}} \log \left(\frac{2}{\bar{\omega}_{0}}+1\right) . \tag{78}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. As $\sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \geq 0$, using (19), (20), we deduce from (24) that for $\frac{\nu}{N} \equiv \bar{s}_{\nu}<s<\frac{\nu+1}{N}$ we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \leq \\
\leq \frac{1}{2} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\gamma_{q}^{[0, m]}} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right)\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(, \cdot,, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}\left(m-m^{\prime}\right)\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}\left(m^{\prime}\right) \\
\mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right)+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{\nu}} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{\nu}}\left(m+m^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\gamma}\left(d m^{\prime}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

We deduce from it that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial}{\partial s} \sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \leq \frac{1}{2} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{m} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) u^{[N]}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right) u^{[N]}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}+ \\
& \quad+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) u^{[N]}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}, \quad \forall s \geq 0, s \neq \bar{s}_{\nu}, \nu \in \mathbb{N},
\end{aligned}
$$

which, joined with the continuity of $\sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$, leads to

$$
\begin{gathered}
\omega^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\omega}_{0}+ \\
+\frac{1}{2} \int_{0}^{s} \int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{m} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) u^{[N]}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) u^{[N]}\left(m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime} d m d s^{\prime}+
\end{gathered}
$$

$$
+\int_{0}^{s} \int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) u^{[N]}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime} d m d s^{\prime}
$$

Finally, with conditions (8), (11), (29) and from the convolution property, we deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\omega}_{0}+\frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s}\left(\omega^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right)\right)^{2} d s^{\prime}+C_{0} \int_{0}^{s} \omega^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime} \tag{79}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, we see immediately that the function

$$
\bar{\omega}(s)=\frac{1}{\left(\frac{1}{\bar{\omega}_{0}}+\frac{1}{2}\right) e^{-C_{0} s}-\frac{1}{2}}
$$

is the solution of the Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{\omega}(s)=\frac{C_{0}}{2}(\bar{\omega}(s))^{2}+C_{0} \bar{\omega}(s), \quad \bar{\omega}(0)=\bar{\omega}_{0} \tag{80}
\end{equation*}
$$

and that its maximum interval of existence is $\left[0, S_{1}\left[\right.\right.$ with $S_{1}$ given in (78). We get (77) by comparing (79) and (80).
Lemma 6. For all $N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\psi}(s) \quad \text { for } 0 \leq s<S_{1} \tag{81}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{\psi}(s)$ is the solution of the Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{\psi}(s)=\frac{C_{0}}{2}[(3 \bar{\omega}(s)+1) \bar{\psi}(s)+2 \bar{\omega}(s)], \quad \bar{\psi}(0)=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}+\times \mathbb{R}} \bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t}) . \tag{82}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Applying (25) and (27) to the right side of (24) and by recalling the definitions (73), (74) and (78), we have

$$
\psi^{[N]}(s) \leq \psi^{[N]}\left(\frac{\nu}{N}\right)+\frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s}\left[\left(3 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \psi\left(s^{\prime}\right)+2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)\right] d s^{\prime}
$$

for $\frac{\nu}{N} \leq s \leq \frac{\nu+1}{N}, \nu=0,1,2, \cdots$. This leads, according (23) and by the usual reasoning we obtain (81).
Lemma 7. For all $N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
J^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{J}(s) \quad \text { for } 0 \leq s<S_{1} \tag{83}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{J}(s)$ is the solution of the Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{J}(s)=\frac{3 C_{0}}{2}(2 \bar{\omega}(s)+1) \bar{J}(s), \quad \bar{J}(0)=\bar{J}_{0} . \tag{84}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. we consider $\tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}, m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, s \in\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right]$. Then, putting

$$
\bar{s}_{\nu}=\frac{\nu}{N}, \quad q_{1}=\tilde{t}_{1}+\frac{\bar{s}_{\nu}}{w(m)}, \quad q_{2}=\tilde{t}_{2}+\frac{\bar{s}_{\nu}}{w(m)}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, s\right)-\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)\right| \leq\left|\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \frac{\nu}{N}\right)-\sigma^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}, \frac{\nu}{N}\right)\right|+  \tag{85}\\
& \quad+\int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|D_{K}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s^{\prime}\right)\right| d s^{\prime}+\int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|D_{L}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s^{\prime}\right)\right| d s^{\prime}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \qquad \begin{array}{l}
D_{K}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)= \\
= \\
=K_{\gamma_{q_{1} \bar{s} \nu}}\left[\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right]\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}\right)-K_{\gamma_{q_{2} \bar{s}_{\nu}}}\left[\sigma^{[N]}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right]\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}\right), \\
D_{L}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)=L_{\gamma_{q_{1} \bar{s}_{\nu}}}\left[\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right]\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}\right)-L_{\gamma_{q_{2} \bar{s}_{\nu}}}\left[\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right]\left(m, \tilde{t}_{2}\right) .
\end{array}
\end{aligned}
$$

Even if $K_{q_{q_{1} \bar{s}}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ and $K_{\gamma_{q_{2} \bar{s} \nu}}[, \cdot$,$] are defined on two different curves \gamma_{q_{1} \bar{s}_{\nu}}$ and $\gamma_{q_{2} \bar{s}_{\nu}}$, if we pay attention to the expression of the right hand side of (19), we note that, once definite $\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot s)\right\}_{q_{1} \bar{s}_{\nu}}(m)$ and $\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q_{2} \bar{s}_{\nu}}(m)$ (see (17)), $D_{K}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)$ can be written in the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
D_{K}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)=  \tag{86}\\
=\frac{1}{2} \int_{0}^{m} \beta\left(m-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right)\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}\left(m-m^{\prime}\right)-\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}\left(m-m^{\prime}\right)\right) \times \\
\times\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)+\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)\right) d m^{\prime}+ \\
-\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}(m)-\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}(m)\right) \int_{0}^{\infty} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)+\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)\right) d m^{\prime}+ \\
-\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}(m)+\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}(m)\right) \int_{0}^{\infty} \beta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right)\left(\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)-\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}\left(m^{\prime}\right)\right) d m^{\prime},
\end{gather*}
$$

where

$$
\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{1}}(m)=\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q_{1} \bar{s}_{\nu}}(m), \quad\left\{\sigma^{[N]}\right\}_{q_{2}}(m)=\left\{\sigma^{[N]}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q_{2} \bar{s}_{\nu}}(m)
$$

Using (8), (9) and definitions (73), (75), we deduce from (86) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{m}{w(m)} \sup _{\tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|D_{K}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|} \leq \tag{87}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{gathered}
\leq C_{0} \int_{0}^{m} j^{[N]}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right) u^{[N]}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}+C_{0} \omega^{[N]}(s) j^{[N]}(m, s)+ \\
C_{0} u^{[N]}(m, s) J^{[N]}(s) .
\end{gathered}
$$

On the other hand, for $D_{L}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)$, from definition (20) we obtain without difficulty

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{m}{w(m)} \sup _{\tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2} \in \mathbb{R}, \tilde{t}_{1} \neq \tilde{t}_{2}} \frac{\left|D_{L}^{[N]}\left(m, \tilde{t}_{1}, \tilde{t}_{2}, s\right)\right|}{\left|\tilde{t}_{1}-\tilde{t}_{2}\right|} \leq  \tag{88}\\
\leq \frac{C_{0}}{2} j^{[N]}(m, s)+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) j^{[N]}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}
\end{gather*}
$$

Using the relation

$$
\begin{gathered}
\int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) j^{[N]}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime} d m= \\
=\int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{m^{\prime \prime}} \frac{m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}}{w\left(m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}\right)} \vartheta\left(m^{\prime \prime}-m^{\prime}, m^{\prime}\right) j^{[N]}\left(m^{\prime \prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime} d m^{\prime \prime}
\end{gathered}
$$

joined with (11), we deduce from the last three estimates and from property of the convolution that

$$
J^{[N]}(s) \leq J^{[N]}\left(\frac{\nu}{N}\right)+3 C_{0} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) \omega^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+\frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime} .
$$

As this inequality has the same form in all intervals $\left[\frac{\nu}{N}, \frac{\nu+1}{N}\right], \nu=0,1, \cdots$, we obtain

$$
J^{[N]}(s) \leq J^{[N]}(0)+3 C_{0} \int_{0}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) \omega^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+\frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime},
$$

or, taking into account (77) and from the relation $J^{[N]}(0)=\bar{J}_{0}$,

$$
J^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{J}_{0}+3 C_{0} \int_{0}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+\frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s} J^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime},
$$

that implies (83) with (84).
Lemma 8. For all $N \in \mathbb{N} \backslash\{0\}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\lambda}(s) \quad \text { for } 0 \leq s<S_{1} \tag{89}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{\lambda}(s)$ is the solution of the Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{\lambda}(s)=C_{0}\left(2 \bar{\omega}(s)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{\lambda}(s)+C_{0}(\bar{\psi}(s)+1) \bar{J}(s), \quad \bar{\lambda}(0)=\bar{\lambda}_{0} . \tag{90}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Using the relations

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} u^{[N]}(m, s)=\psi^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\psi}(s), \quad \sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} j^{[N]}(m, s)=\lambda^{[N]}(s), \\
\omega^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{\omega}(s), \quad J^{[N]}(s) \leq \bar{J}(s),
\end{gathered}
$$

we deduce from (85), (87), (88) and from the property of the convolution that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda^{[N]}(s) \leq \lambda^{[N]}\left(\frac{\nu}{N}\right)+2 C_{0} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right) \lambda^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+ \\
+C_{0} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \bar{\psi}\left(s^{\prime}\right) \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+\frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \lambda^{[N]}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+C_{0} \int_{\frac{\nu}{N}}^{s} \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gathered}
$$

In a similar way to the proof of the previous lemma, from this inequality we deduce (89) with (90).

## 7 Convergence of the approximate solutions

To solve the problem (21)-(22), it is essential to prove the convergence of the approximate solutions $\sigma^{[N]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$. Thus, we will prove the convergence of a subsequence of the approximate solutions in the interval $\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$, which will give us the solution of the problem in this interval.

Theorem 1. We suppose that $\beta(\cdot, \cdot), \vartheta(\cdot, \cdot)$ and $w(\cdot)$, satisfy the conditions mentioned in paragraph 2 and the condition (69) and that $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})$ is continuous in $(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}$ and satisfies the conditions (23), (70)-(72). Let $S_{1}$ the number given in (78). Then the problem (21)-(22) admits a solution in the interval $\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$. Moreover the solution is unique in the class of the functions $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ which satisfy the conditions
i) $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is continuous in $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$,
ii) for all $s \in\left[0, S_{1}\left[, u(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}}|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)|\right.\right.$ is integrable in $m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}$, iii) for all $\bar{s}_{1} \in\left[0, S_{1}\left[\right.\right.$, we have $\sup _{s \in\left[0, \bar{s}_{1}\right]} \int_{0}^{\infty} u(m, s) d m<\infty$.

Proof. We construct the sequence of approximate solutions $\sigma^{\left[2^{n}\right]}$, $n=1,2, \cdots$, which are the solutions of the problem (24), (22) with $N=2^{n}$. For simplicity, we write $\sigma_{n}$ instead of $\sigma^{\left[2^{n}\right]}$. In the interval $\left[\frac{\nu}{2^{n}}, \frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}[\right.$ the approximate solutions $\sigma_{n}$ and $\sigma_{n+1}$ are defined by integral operators on the same curves $\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{1}}, \bar{s}_{1}=\frac{\nu}{2^{n}}$, while in $\left[\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}, \frac{\nu+1}{2^{n}}\right.$ [ the approximate solutions $\sigma_{n}$ and $\sigma_{n+1}$ are defined on the different curves $\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{1}}, \gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}, \bar{s}_{2}=\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}$ respectively.

We put

$$
\begin{gather*}
\eta_{n}(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}}\left|\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|  \tag{91}\\
\bar{\alpha}_{n}(s)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \eta_{n}(m, s) d m  \tag{92}\\
\bar{\beta}_{n}(s)=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R}}\left|\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|=\sup _{m \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} \eta_{n}(m, s) . \tag{93}
\end{gather*}
$$

We will also write $u_{n}(m, s), j_{n}(m, s), \omega_{n}(s), \psi_{n}(s), J_{n}(s), \lambda_{n}(s)$ instead of $u^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(m, s), j^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(m, s), \omega^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(s), \psi^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(s), J^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(s), \lambda^{\left[2^{n}\right]}(s)$ (see (73)-(76)).

We recall that, for all $q \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\bar{s} \geq 0$, the definition of the operator $K_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}}}[\cdot, \cdot]$ gives us

$$
\begin{gathered}
K_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}}\left[\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})= \\
=K_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t}) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore, with the linearity of the operator $L_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}}}[\varphi]$, we get

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sigma_{n}\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{\nu}{2^{n}}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{\nu}{2^{n}}\right)+ \\
+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\frac{\nu}{2^{n}}}^{s}\left[K_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{1}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
\left.+L_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{1}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right] d s^{\prime}
\end{gathered}
$$

for

$$
\bar{s}_{1}=\frac{\nu}{2^{n}} \leq s \leq \frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}
$$

and

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\sigma_{n}\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(m, \tilde{t}, \frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}\right)+  \tag{95}\\
+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}}^{s}\left[K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
\left.+L_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\sigma_{n+1}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right] d s^{\prime}+\Delta_{\bar{s}_{1} \bar{s}_{2}}(m, \tilde{t})
\end{gather*}
$$

for

$$
\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}} \leq s \leq \frac{\nu+1}{2^{n}}, \quad \bar{s}_{1}=\frac{\nu}{2^{n}}, \quad \bar{s}_{2}=\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}
$$

where

$$
\Delta_{\bar{s}_{1} \bar{s}_{2}}(m, \tilde{t})=
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}}^{s}\left[K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{1}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right),\right.\right. \\
& \left.\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\left.\gamma_{q}{\overline{\bar{x}_{1}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-L_{\gamma_{q} \overline{s_{2}}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right] d s^{\prime} .} .
\end{aligned}
$$

According to the conditions (8), (9), (10), it results from (19), (20) (see also (77)) that, for all $q \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\bar{s}, s \in\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}}\left[\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)+\sigma_{n+1}(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq \\
& \leq \frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{m}\left(u_{n}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right)+u_{n+1}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right)\right) \eta_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}+  \tag{96}\\
&+ C_{0} \eta_{n}(m, s) \bar{\omega}(s)+\frac{C_{0}}{2}\left(u_{n}(m, s)+u_{n+1}(m, s)\right) \bar{\alpha}_{n}(s), \\
& \sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|L_{\gamma_{q \bar{s}}}\left[\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)-\sigma_{n+1}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq  \tag{97}\\
& \leq \frac{C_{0}}{2} \eta_{n}(m, s)+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \eta_{n}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime} .
\end{align*}
$$

On the other hand, from the definitions (17) and (18) the values of $\sigma_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, \tilde{t}^{\prime}, s\right)$ on the curves $\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{1}(m, \tilde{t})}$ and $\gamma_{q \bar{s}_{2}(m, \tilde{t})}$ are given by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\{\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{1}(m, \tilde{t})}\left(m^{\prime}\right)=\sigma_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, \tilde{t}+\frac{\bar{s}_{1}}{w(m)}-\frac{\bar{s}_{1}}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)}, s\right), \\
& \left\{\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{2}(m, \tilde{t})}\left(m^{\prime}\right)=\sigma_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, \tilde{t}+\frac{\bar{s}_{2}}{w(m)}-\frac{\bar{s}_{2}}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)}, s\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, taking into account the relation $\bar{s}_{2}-\bar{s}_{1}=\frac{2 \nu+1}{2^{n+1}}-\frac{\nu}{2^{n}}=\frac{1}{2^{n+1}}$ and the hypothesis (69), we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left|\left\{\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{1}(m, \tilde{t})}\left(m^{\prime}\right)-\left\{\sigma_{n}(\cdot, \cdot, s)\right\}_{q \bar{s}_{2}(m, \tilde{t})}\left(m^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq  \tag{98}\\
\leq j_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right)\left|\frac{\bar{s}_{1}}{w(m)}-\frac{\bar{s}_{1}}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)}-\left(\frac{\bar{s}_{2}}{w(m)}-\frac{\bar{s}_{2}}{w\left(m^{\prime}\right)}\right)\right| \leq j_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) \frac{\bar{C}_{w}}{2^{n}} .
\end{gather*}
$$

With the information of (8), (9), and (10), we deduce from (19), (20) and (98), in a similar manner to (86)) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{m}{w(m)}\left|K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{1}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq \tag{99}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\leq \frac{\bar{C}_{w}}{2^{n}} C_{0}\left[\int_{0}^{m} u_{n}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right) j_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}+j_{n}(m, s) \omega_{n}(s)+u_{n}(m, s) J_{n}(s)\right] \\
\quad \frac{m}{w(m)}\left|L_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{1}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-L_{\gamma_{q} \bar{s}_{2}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right| \leq  \tag{100}\\
\leq \frac{\bar{C}_{w}}{2^{n}}\left[\frac{C_{0}}{2} j_{n}(m, s)+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) j_{n}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime}\right]
\end{gather*}
$$

As

$$
\begin{gathered}
\int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{m}\left(u_{n}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right)+u_{n+1}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s\right)\right) \eta_{n}\left(m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime} d m \leq 2 \bar{\omega}(s) \bar{\alpha}_{n}(s) \\
\int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \eta_{n}\left(m+m^{\prime}, s\right) d m^{\prime} d m \leq C_{0} \bar{\alpha}_{n}(s)
\end{gathered}
$$

and $\bar{\alpha}_{n}(0)=\bar{\beta}_{n}(0)=0$, and by using (96), (97), (99), (100) (see also (77), (81), (83), (89)), we deduce from (94)-(95) that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\bar{\alpha}_{n}(s) \leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s}\left(2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{\alpha}_{n}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}+\frac{1}{2^{n}} \frac{3 C_{0} \bar{C}_{w}}{2} \int_{0}^{s}\left(2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}  \tag{101}\\
\bar{\beta}_{n}(s) \leq C_{0} \int_{0}^{s}\left(\left(2 \bar{\psi}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{\alpha}_{n}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\left(\bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{\beta}_{n}\left(s^{\prime}\right)\right) d s^{\prime}+  \tag{102}\\
+\frac{1}{2^{n}} \bar{C}_{w} C_{0} \int_{0}^{s}\left(\left(2 \bar{\psi}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\left(\bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{\lambda}\left(s^{\prime}\right)\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gather*}
$$

It follows that

$$
\bar{\alpha}_{n}(s) \leq \bar{y}(s), \quad \bar{\beta}_{n}(s) \leq \bar{z}(s)
$$

where $\bar{y}(s)$ is the solution of the following Cauchy problem

$$
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{y}(s)=\frac{3 C_{0}}{2}(2 \bar{\omega}(s)+1) \bar{y}(s)+\frac{1}{2^{n}} \frac{3 \bar{C}_{w} C_{0}}{2}(2 \bar{\omega}(s)+1) \bar{J}(s), \quad \bar{y}(0)=0
$$

while $\bar{z}(s)$ is the solution of the following Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{d}{d s} \bar{z}(s)=C_{0}\left(\bar{\omega}(s)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{z}(s)+C_{0}(2 \bar{\psi}(s)+1) \bar{y}(s)+ \\
+\frac{1}{2^{n}} \bar{C}_{w} C_{0}\left((2 \bar{\psi}(s)+1) \bar{J}(s)+\left(\bar{\omega}(s)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{\lambda}(s)\right), \quad \bar{z}(0)=0
\end{gathered}
$$

To summarize, if we put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{A}(s)=\frac{3 C_{0} \bar{C}_{w}}{2} \int_{0}^{s}\left(2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right) e^{\frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{s^{\prime}}^{s}\left(2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime \prime}\right)+1\right) d s^{\prime \prime}} d s^{\prime} \tag{103}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{gather*}
\bar{B}(s)=C_{0} \int_{0}^{s}\left[\left(2 \bar{\psi}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{A}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\bar{C}_{w}\left(\left(2 \bar{\psi}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+1\right) \bar{J}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\left(\bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\right) \bar{\lambda}\left(s^{\prime}\right)\right)\right] \times \\
\times e^{\frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{s^{\prime}}^{s}\left(2 \bar{\omega}\left(s^{\prime \prime}\right)+1\right) d s^{\prime \prime}} d s^{\prime} \tag{104}
\end{gather*}
$$

we find that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{\alpha}_{n}(s) \leq \frac{1}{2^{n}} \bar{A}(s), \quad \bar{\beta}_{n}(s) \leq \frac{1}{2^{n}} \bar{B}(s) . \tag{105}
\end{equation*}
$$

As $\bar{B}(s)$ defined in (103)-(104) does not depend on $n$ and it's an increasing function well defined on $\left[0, S_{1}\right.$ [, i.e.:

$$
0 \leq \bar{B}\left(s_{1}\right) \leq \bar{B}\left(s_{2}\right)<\infty \quad \forall s_{1}, s_{2} \in\left[0, S_{1}\left[, \quad s_{1} \leq s_{2},\right.\right.
$$

from (93) and (105) we deduce that
$\forall \varepsilon>0, \forall \bar{s} \in\left[0, S_{1}\left[, \exists \bar{n} \in \mathbb{N}: \bar{n}>\underset{(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}+\times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \bar{s}]}{\xi \Rightarrow} \sup \left|\sigma_{n_{1}}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n_{2}}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|<\varepsilon\right.\right.$,
$\forall n_{1}, n_{2} \geq \bar{n}$, where $\bar{n}>\frac{1}{\log 2}\left(\log \bar{B}(\bar{s})+\log \frac{1}{\varepsilon}\right)+1$.
This proves the uniform convergence of $\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ in $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \bar{s}]$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Moreover, this result about the convergence remains valid for all $\bar{s} \in\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$.

Let us provisionally designate by $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ limit of the sequence $\left\{\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$, i.e.

$$
\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s) .
$$

As $\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ converges uniformly to $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ in $\mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \bar{s}]$ for any $\bar{s} \in$ $] 0, S_{1}\left[\right.$, it clear that $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is also continuous and non-negative; moreover, from the first inequality of (105) we deduce that $\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}} \sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is integrable on $\mathbb{R}_{+}(\ni m)$ for all $s \in\left[0, S_{1}[\right.$.

Let $\bar{s} \in] 0, S_{1}[$. We put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\infty}=\sup _{(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, s]}\left|\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})-I(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|, \tag{106}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
I(m, \tilde{t}, s) & =\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right. \\
& \left.+L_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

As

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})+\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q \tilde{s}_{\nu}(n, s)}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
\left.L_{\gamma_{q \tilde{s}_{\nu}(n, s)}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime}
\end{gathered}
$$

with

$$
\tilde{s}_{\nu}(n, s)=\frac{\nu}{2^{n}} \quad \text { for } \quad \frac{\nu}{2^{n}} \leq s<\frac{\nu+1}{2^{n}}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})-I(m, \tilde{t}, s)=  \tag{107}\\
=\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-I_{n}^{[1]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-I_{n}^{[2]}(m, \tilde{t}, s) \\
I_{n}^{[1]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
+L_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+ \\
\left.\quad-L_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime} \\
I_{n}^{[2]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
+L_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q \tilde{s}_{\nu}(n, s)}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+ \\
\left.\quad-L_{\gamma_{q \tilde{s}_{\nu}(n, s)}}\left[\sigma_{n}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gather*}
$$

On one hand, the uniform convergence of $\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ to $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ implies that

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(\left|\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\sigma_{n}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|+\left|I_{n}^{[1]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|\right)=0
$$

On the other hand, recalling the reasoning used to obtain (99)-(100), there is no difficulty to find that

$$
\forall \varepsilon>0, \exists \bar{n}_{\varepsilon} \in \mathbb{N}: n \geq \bar{n}_{\varepsilon} \Rightarrow \sup _{(m, \tilde{t}, s) \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \times \mathbb{R} \times[0, \bar{s}]}\left|I_{n}^{[2]}(m, \tilde{t}, s)\right|<\varepsilon
$$

We deduce that

$$
\Delta_{\infty}=0
$$

or

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)=\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})+  \tag{108}\\
+\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+L_{\gamma_{q s}}\left[\sigma_{\infty}\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime}
\end{gather*}
$$

According to the continuity of $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$, the derivative with respect to $s$ of the right hand side of (108) is well defined, which allows us to pass from (108) to the differential version (21), i.e. $\sigma_{\infty}(m, \tilde{t}, s)$ is a solution of the problem (21)-(22).

To demonstrate the uniqueness, we consider two solutions $\sigma$ and $\varphi$ of the problem (21)-(22) belonging to the class of functions defined in the statement of the theorem. As $\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, 0)-\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, 0)=0$ and

$$
\begin{gathered}
K_{\gamma_{q s} s}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})-K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\varphi(\cdot, \cdot, s), \varphi(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t})= \\
=K_{\gamma_{q s}}[\sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)+\varphi(\cdot, \cdot, s), \sigma(\cdot, \cdot, s)-\varphi(\cdot, \cdot, s)](m, \tilde{t}),
\end{gathered}
$$

integrating (21) with respect to $s$ with $s \in] 0, S_{1}[$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, s)= \\
=\int_{0}^{s} \frac{m}{w(m)}\left(K_{\gamma_{q s^{\prime}}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)+\varphi\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right), \sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\varphi\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})+\right. \\
\left.+L_{\gamma_{s^{\prime}}}\left[\sigma\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)-\varphi\left(\cdot, \cdot, s^{\prime}\right)\right](m, \tilde{t})\right) d s^{\prime} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore, putting
$\eta(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}}|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)-\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, s)|, \quad u_{2}^{*}(m, s)=\sup _{\tilde{t} \in \mathbb{R}}|\sigma(m, \tilde{t}, s)+\varphi(m, \tilde{t}, s)|$, and in a similar way to (96)-(97), we obtain

$$
\begin{gathered}
\eta(m, s) \leq \int_{0}^{s}\left[\frac{C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{m} u_{2}^{*}\left(m-m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) \eta\left(m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime}+\right. \\
\frac{C_{0}}{2} \eta\left(m, s^{\prime}\right) \int_{0}^{\infty} u_{2}^{*}\left(m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime}+\frac{C_{0}}{2} u_{2}^{*}\left(m, s^{\prime}\right) \int_{0}^{\infty} \eta\left(m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime}+\frac{C_{0}}{2} \eta\left(m, s^{\prime}\right)+ \\
\left.+\frac{m}{w(m)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \vartheta\left(m, m^{\prime}\right) \eta\left(m+m^{\prime}, s^{\prime}\right) d m^{\prime}\right] d s^{\prime} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Consequently, if we put

$$
\bar{g}(s)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \eta(m, s) d m,
$$

in a similar way to (101), we have

$$
\bar{g}(s) \leq \frac{3 C_{0}}{2} \int_{0}^{s}\left(1+\int_{0}^{\infty} u_{2}^{*}\left(m, s^{\prime}\right) d m\right) \bar{g}\left(s^{\prime}\right) d s^{\prime}
$$

We deduce from the condition iii) that

$$
\bar{g}(s)=0 \quad \forall s \in\left[0, S_{1}\right]
$$

that proves the uniqueness of the solution.
Remark 2. If the entry condition does not depend on time $\tilde{t}$ (i.e $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m, \tilde{t})=$ $\bar{\sigma}_{0}(m)$ ), we can directly construct the solution, which will be an analytic function in $s=-z$; or rather, the equation with the homogeneous entry rewritten on the trajectories will be a formal variant of equation studied by Melzak in [9]. In addition, the result can be deduced almost immediately from the proposition 1 and 2.

## References

[1] H. Belhireche, M. Z. Aissaoui, H. Fujita Yashima, Equations monodimensionnelles du mouvement de l'air avec la transition de phase de l'eau, Sci. Techn. Univ. Constantine - A, vol. 31 (2011), pp. 9-17.
[2] H. Belhireche, M.Z. Aissaoui, H. Fujita Yashima, Solution globale de l'équation de coagulation des gouttelettes en chute, Rend. Sem. Mat. Univ. Polit. Torino, vol. 70 (2012), pp. $261-278$.
[3] P. B. Dubovskii, Solubility of the transport equation in the kinetics of coagulation and fragmentation, Izv. Math, vol. 65 (2001), pp. $1-22$.
[4] P. B. Dubovskii, Mathematical theory of coagulation, Seoul National Univ., Research Inst. Math., 1994.
[5] H. Fujita Yashima, Modelación matemática del movimiento de la atmósfera con la transición de fase del agua, Rev. Invest. Operac., vol. 34 (2013), pp. $93-104$.
[6] H. Fujita Yashima, V. Campana, M. Z. Aissaoui, Système d'équations d'un modèle du mouvement de l'air impliquant la transition de phase de l'eau dans l'atmosphère, Ann. Math. Afr., vol. 2 (2011), pp. 66-92.
[7] V. A. Galkin, The Smoluchowski equation of the kinetic theory of coagulation for spatially non-uniform systems, Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, vol. 285 (1985), 1087 - 1091; English transl., Soviet Phys. Dokl., vol. 30 (1985), 1012 - 1014.
[8] V. A. Galkin, Generalized solutions of the Smoluchowski kinetic equation for spatially inhomogeneous systems, Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, vol. 293 (1987), 74 - 77; English transl., Soviet Phys. Dokl., vol. 32 (1987), pp. $200-202$.
[9] A. Z. Melzak, A scalar transport equation, Transactions AMS, vol. 85 (1957), pp. $547-560$.
[10] M. Merad, H. Belhireche, H. Fujita Yashima, Solution stationnaire de l'équation de coagulation de gouttelettes en chute avec le vent horizontal, Rend. Sem. Mat. Univ. Padova, vol. 129 (2013), pp. $225-244$.
[11] H. Müller, Zur allgemeinen Theorie der raschen Koagulation, Kolloidchem. Beib., vol. 27 (1928), pp. $223-250$.
[12] F. Prodi, A. Battaglia, Meteorologia - Parte II, Microfisica, Grafica Pucci, Roma, 2004. (http://www.meteo.unibonn.de/mitarbeiter/battaglia/teaching.html).
[13] S. Selvaduray, H. Fujita Yashima, Equazioni del moto dell'aria con la transizione di fase dell'acqua nei tre stati: gassoso, liquido e solido, Acc. Sci. Torino, Memorie Cl. Sc. FMN., Serie V, vol. 35 (2011), pp. 37-69.
[14] M. Smoluchowski, Drei Vorträge über Diffusion, Brownische Bewegung und Koagulation von Kolloidteilchen, Phys. Zeits., vol. 17 (1916), pp. $557-585$.

# Ideals generated by linear forms and symmetric algebras* 

Gaetana Restuccia ${ }^{\dagger}$<br>Paola L. Staglianò ${ }^{\ddagger}$


#### Abstract

We consider ideals generated by linear forms in the variables $X_{1} \ldots, X_{n}$ in the polynomial ring $R\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}\right]$, being $R$ a commutative, Noetherian ring with identity. We investigate when a sequence $a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{m}$ of linear forms is an $s$-sequence, in order to compute algebraic invariants of the symmetric algebra of the ideal $I=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{m}\right)$.


MSC: 13C10, 13C15, 13D02
keywords: Symmetric algebra, linear forms, regularity.

## 1 Introduction

Let $M$ be a finitely generated module on a commutative ring $R$ with identity. Let $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ be a $n \times m$ matrix, with entries in $R, I_{k}(A)$ the ideal generated by the $k \times k$ minors of $A, 1 \leq k \leq \min (m, n)$, and let $\varphi: R^{m} \longrightarrow R^{n}$ be a module homomorphism. We denote by $I_{k}(\varphi)$ the ideal $I_{k}(A)$, where $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ is the $n \times m$ matrix associated to $\varphi$, for an appropriate choice of the bases.
Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
R^{m} \xrightarrow{\varphi} R^{n} \rightarrow M \rightarrow 0 \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^2]be a free presentation of the module $M$. If we consider the symmetric algebras of the modules in (1), the presentation ideal $J$ of $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)$ is generated by the linear forms in the variables $Y_{j}, 1 \leq j \leq n$ :
$$
a_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{j i} Y_{j}, \quad 1 \leq i \leq m
$$

The theory of $s$-sequences has been recently introduced by Herzog, Restuccia, Tang ([4]) and it permits to compute the invariants of $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)$ starting from the main algebraic invariants of quotients of $R$, via the initial ideal $\operatorname{in}_{<}(J)$, with respect to a suitable term order, introduced in $R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$, where $n$ is the number of elements in a minimal system of generators of $M$. In this paper we are interested to the case the ideal $J$ is generated by an $s$-sequence. The problem is part of a wider context, precisely:
Given an ideal $I=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}\right) \subset R\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}\right]$ generated by linear forms in the variables $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}$, we want to study when $I$ is generated by an $s$-sequence and to compute the standard invariants of $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)$ in terms of the corresponding invariants of special quotients of the ring $R$.
Standard invariants of $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)$ are Krull dimension, multiplicity, depth and regularity, denoted respectively by $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)\right), \mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)\right)$, $\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}\right.$ $(I))$ with respect to the maximal graded ideal, $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)\right)$. The first three invariants are classical. For the last invariant, we recall that $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(I)\right)$ is the Castelnuovo-Mumford regularity of the graded module $I$. Its importance is briefly explained in Einsenbud-Goto theorem which is an interesting description of regularity in terms of graded Betti numbers of $M$ ([3]). In general the problem is hard, but if $I$ is generated by an $s$-sequence, our approach gives some interesting results. In Section 1, we recall some results obtained about ideals generated by linear forms as relation ideals of special symmetric algebras. At the end of the section, we consider some basic properties about $s$-sequences and, additionally, we recall how to compute the invariants ([7], [8]). In Section 2, for the classes of ideals studied in the previous section, we find sufficient and necessary conditions so that they are generated by $s$-sequences. In this direction a main result is:

Theorem Let $J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}\right) \subset S=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$, be an ideal generated by $m$ linear forms, $a_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j} Y_{j}, a_{i j} \in R, 1 \leq i \leq m, 1 \leq j \leq n$. If $\operatorname{depth}\left(I_{k}(\varphi)\right) \geq m-k+1,1 \leq k \leq m$, then
(i) $J$ is generated by an $s$-sequence of $m$ elements;
(ii) $\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J) \cong S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / K$, where $K$ is an ideal generated by linear forms in the variables $Z_{j}, 1 \leq j \leq m$ and $i_{<} K=\left(J_{1} Z_{1}, J_{2} Z_{2}, \ldots\right.$,
$\left.J_{m} Z_{m}\right)$, where $J_{1}, \ldots, J_{m}$ are the annihilator ideals of the sequence $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m} ;$
(iii) $J_{i-1}:\left(a_{i}\right)=J_{i-1}$ with $J_{i-1}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i-1}\right)$.

## 2 Notations and basic results

This section deals with ideals generated by linear forms of a polynomial ring $R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$ over a commutative, noetherian ring $R$ with identity. We are interested in ideals that are kernels of epimorphisms of symmetric algebras, in particular they are ideals of relations of symmetric algebras of finitely generated modules on $R$. We give a list of results that will be useful in the following.

Definition 2.1. Let $\underline{a}=\left\{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence of elements of $R$. The sequence $\underline{a}$ is called a $d$-sequence if $\underline{a}$ is a minimal generating system for the ideal $\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n}\right)$ and $\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i}\right): a_{i+1} a_{k}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i}\right): a_{k}$ for all $i=0, \ldots, n-1, k \geq i+1$.

Definition 2.2. Let $I$ be an ideal of the ring $R . I$ is an almost complete intersection if the number of its generators is depth $(I)+1$.

Let $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ be a $m \times n$ matrix, $I_{k}(A)$ the ideal generated by all $k \times k$ minors of the matrix $A, 1 \leq k \leq \min (m, n)$. By definition, we have

$$
I_{0}(A)=R \quad \text { and } \quad I_{k}(A)=0 \quad \text { for } k>\min (m, n)
$$

Let $R^{m} \xrightarrow{\varphi=\left(a_{i j}\right)} R^{n}$ an homomorphism between free modules. We denote by $I_{k}(\varphi)$ the ideal $I_{k}(A)$, where $A$ is the matrix associated to $\varphi$, for a convenient choice of the bases. Let

$$
R^{m} \xrightarrow{\varphi=\left(a_{i j}\right)} R^{n} \longrightarrow M \longrightarrow 0
$$

be a free presentation of the module $M$.
The following results are known. The kernel of the canonical epimorphism

$$
S=\operatorname{Sym}_{R}\left(R^{n}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M) \rightarrow 0
$$

is a complete intersection if and only if

$$
\operatorname{depth}\left(I_{k}(\varphi)\right) \geq m-k+1, \quad 1 \leq k \leq m
$$

Proof. See [1], Proposition 3.
The kernel of the canonical epimorphism

$$
S=\operatorname{Sym}_{R}\left(R^{n}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M) \rightarrow 0
$$

is an almost complete intersection with $\operatorname{depth}\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}\right)=m-1$ if and only if

$$
\operatorname{depth}\left(I_{k}\left(\varphi^{\prime}\right)\right) \geq(m-1)-k+1, \quad 1 \leq k \leq m-1
$$

where

$$
\varphi=\varphi^{\prime}+\varphi^{\prime \prime}, \quad \varphi^{\prime}: R^{m-1} \rightarrow R^{m}
$$

such that

$$
\varphi^{\prime}\left(f_{1}\right)=a_{1}, \ldots, \varphi^{\prime}\left(f_{m-1}\right)=a_{m-1}
$$

where $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{m-1}$ form a standard basis for $R^{m-1}$. Moreover, the kernel can be generated by a $d$-sequence if and only if

$$
Z_{1} \cap I K=B_{1}
$$

where $Z_{1}$ and $B_{1}$ are respectively the 1-cycle and the 1-boundary of the Koszul complex $K$ over $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}$ and $I$ is an ideal of $R$.

Proof. See [8], Theorem 6.
Let $M$ be a finitely generated module on $R$, with generators $f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots, f_{n}$. We denote by $\left(a_{i j}\right)_{\substack{i=1, \ldots, m \\ j=1, \ldots, n}}$ the relation matrix, by $\operatorname{Sym}_{i}(M)$ the $i$-th symmetric power of $M$, and by $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)=\bigoplus_{i \geq 0} \operatorname{Sym}_{i}(M)$ the symmetric algebra of $M$. Note that

$$
\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right] / J
$$

where

$$
J=\left(g_{1}, \ldots, g_{m}\right), \text { and } g_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j} Y_{j}
$$

We consider $S=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$ a graded ring by assigning to each variable $Y_{i}$ the degree 1 and to the elements of $R$ the degree 0 . Then $J$ is a graded ideal and the natural epimorphism $S \rightarrow \operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)$ is a homomorphism of graded $R$-algebras.
Let $<$ be a monomial order on monomials in $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ with $Y_{1}<Y_{2}<$ $\ldots<Y_{n}$. We call admissible such an order. For any polynomial $f \in$
$R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right], f=\sum_{\alpha} a_{\alpha} Y^{\alpha}$, we put $\mathrm{in}_{<}(f)=a_{\alpha} Y^{\alpha}$ where $Y^{\alpha}$ is the largest monomial in $f$ with respect to $<$ with $a_{\alpha} \neq 0$, and we set

$$
\mathrm{in}_{<}(J)=\left(\mathrm{in}_{<}(f): f \in J\right) .
$$

For $i=1, \ldots, n$ we set $M_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{i} R f_{j}$, and let $I_{i}$ be the colon ideal $M_{i-1}:\left\langle f_{i}\right\rangle$. In other words, $I_{i}$ is the annihilator of the cyclic module $M_{i} / M_{i-1}$ and so $M_{i} / M_{i-1} \cong R / I_{i}$. For convenience we also set $M_{0}=0$.

Definition 2.3. The colon ideals $I_{i}, 1 \leq i \leq n$, are called annihilator ideals of the sequence $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$.

Notice that $\left(I_{1} Y_{1}, I_{2} Y_{2}, \ldots, I_{n} Y_{n}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{in}_{<}(J)$, and the ideals coincide in degree 1.

Definition 2.4. The generators $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$ of $M$ are called an $s$-sequence (with respect to an admissible order $<$ ), if

$$
\mathrm{in}_{<}(J)=\left(I_{1} Y_{1}, I_{2} Y_{2}, \ldots, I_{n} Y_{n}\right)
$$

If in addition $I_{1} \subset I_{2} \subset \ldots \subset I_{n}$, then $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$ is called a strong $s$-sequence.
The invariants of the symmetric algebra of a module which is generated by an $s$-sequence can be computed by the corresponding invariants of quotients of $R$. We have

Proposition 2.1. Let $M$ be generated by an s-sequence $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$, with annihilator ideals $I_{1}, \ldots, I_{n}$. Then

1. $d:=\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)\right)=\max _{\substack{0 \leq r \leq n \\ 1 \leq i_{1}<\ldots<i_{r} \leq n}}\left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(R /\left(I_{i_{1}}+\ldots+I_{i_{r}}\right)\right)+r\right\} ;$
2. $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)\right)=\sum_{\substack{0 \leq r \leq n, 1 \leq i_{1}<\ldots<i_{r} \leq n \\ \operatorname{dim}\left(R /\left(I_{1}+\ldots+I_{r}\right)\right)=d-r}} \mathrm{e}\left(R /\left(I_{i_{1}}+\ldots+I_{i_{r}}\right)\right)$.
and, if $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$ is a strong $s$-sequence, then
$1^{\prime} . d=\max _{0 \leq r \leq n}\left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(R / I_{r}\right)+r\right\} ;$
3. $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)\right)=\sum_{\operatorname{dim}\left(R / I_{r}\right)=d-r} \mathrm{e}\left(R / I_{r}\right)$.

If $R=K\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{m}\right]$ and we assume that $M$ is generated by a strong $s$-sequence of elements of the same degree, with annihilator ideals $I_{1} \subset$ $\cdots \subset I_{n}$, we have
3. $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)\right) \leq \max \left\{\operatorname{reg}\left(I_{i}\right): i=1, \ldots, n\right\}$;
4. $\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)\right) \geq \min \left\{\operatorname{depth}\left(R / I_{i}\right)+i: i=0,1, \ldots, n\right\}$.

Proof. See [4], Proposition 2.4., 2.6.

## 3 Relation ideals generated by $d$-sequences

The aim of this section is to study ideals generated by linear forms that are relation ideals of symmetric algebras and to describe their invariants via the $s$-sequence theory. Let $J$ be the ideal of relations of the symmetric algebra $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(M)$ of a module $M$.

Let $J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}\right) \subset S=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$ be an ideal generated by $m$ linear forms $a_{i}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{j i} Y_{j}$ on the variables $Y_{j}$. If $\operatorname{depth}\left(I_{k}(\varphi)\right) \geq m-k+1$, $1 \leq k \leq m$, then
(i) $J$ is generated by an $s$-sequence of $m$ elements;
(ii) $\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J) \cong S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / K$, where $K$ is an ideal generated by linear forms on the variables $Z_{j}$ and $\mathrm{in}_{<}(K)=\left(J_{1} Z_{1}, \ldots, J_{m} Z_{m}\right)$, where $J_{1}, \ldots, J_{m}$ are the annihilator ideals of the $s$-sequence generating the ideal $J$;
(iii) $J_{i-1}:\left(a_{i}\right)=J_{i-1}, J_{i}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i-1}\right), i=2, \ldots, m$ and $J$ is generated by a strong $s$-sequence.

Proof. (i) By Theorem 2, $J$ is generated by a regular sequence, then it is generated by an $s$-sequence with respect to the reverse lexicographic order on the monomials in the variables $Y_{j}$ with $Y_{n}>\ldots>Y_{1}$.
(ii) Since $J$ is generated by a strong $s$-sequence, the ideal $K$ has a Gröbner basis that is linear in the variables $Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}$, then in $\operatorname{in}_{<}(K)=\left(J_{1} Z_{1}, J_{2} Z_{2}, \ldots\right.$, $J_{m} Z_{m}$ ).
(iii) Since $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}$ is a regular sequence, by definition we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
J_{1}=0:\left(a_{1}\right)=(0) \\
J_{i}=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{i-1}\right):\left(a_{i}\right)=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{i-1}\right) \quad i=2, \ldots, m
\end{gathered}
$$

then the assertion holds. Now, it results $J_{i-1} \subsetneq J_{i}, i=2, \ldots, m$, and the $s$-sequence is strong.

The assertion (ii) of the theorem 3 gives information about the initial ideal of the relation ideal of the first syzygy module of the ideal $J$.

Let $J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}\right) \subset R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]=S$ be an ideal generated by linear forms in the variables $Y_{i}$ that form a regular sequence. Then:
(i) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\operatorname{dim} R+n+1$; If $R=K\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{t}\right]$ and we suppose that $\operatorname{deg} a_{i}=a$ for all $i$, then
(ii) $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{m} a^{i-1}$.
(iii) If $R$ is the polynomial ring $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \leq(m-1)(a-1)+1$;
(iv) $\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\operatorname{depth}(S)+1$, if $R$ is Cohen-Macaulay.

Proof. Since $J$ is generated by a strong $s$-sequence, we can compute the standard invariants, using Proposition 2.1, then
(i) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\max _{0 \leq r \leq m}\left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{r}\right)+r, r=0, \ldots, m\right\}=$ $\operatorname{dim}\left(S /\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}\right)\right)+m=\operatorname{dim}(S)-m+1+m=\operatorname{dim}(S)+1$.
(ii) $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(J)\right)=\sum_{0 \leq r \leq m} \mathrm{e}\left(R / J_{r}\right)$,
being $J_{r}$ generated by a regular sequence. It follows that $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=$ $\sum_{i=1}^{m} a^{i-1}$, where $a$ is the degree of the generators of $J_{i}$.
(iii) $\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \geq \min _{0 \leq r \leq m}\left\{\operatorname{depth}\left(S / J_{r}\right)+r, r=0, \ldots, m\right\}=$ $=\min \{\operatorname{depth}(S)-m+1+m\}=\operatorname{depth}(S)+1$.
If $R$ is Cohen-Macaulay, $\operatorname{dim}(S)=\operatorname{depth}(S)$, then
$\operatorname{depth}(S)+1 \leq \operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \leq \operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\operatorname{dim}(S)+1=$ $\operatorname{depth}(S)+1$.
(iv) $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \leq(m-1)(a-1)+1$, being $a$ the degree of any generator of $J([7]$, Proposition 1).
(i) follows from $\operatorname{Sym}_{R}(J)=\mathcal{R}(J)$, since $J$ is generated by a regular sequence and $\operatorname{dim}(\mathcal{R}(J))=\operatorname{dim}\left(R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]\right)+1([2],[9])$.

Let $J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}, a_{m}\right) \subset S=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$ be an ideal generated by $m$ linear forms. Suppose that:

$$
\operatorname{depth}\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}\right)=m-1, \quad Z_{1} \cap J K=B_{1}, \quad J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}\right)
$$

Then we have
(i) $J$ is generated by a $d$-sequence;
(ii) $\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J) \cong S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / K$, where $K$ is an ideal generated by linear forms in the variables $Z_{j}$, in ${ }_{<} K=\left(J_{1} Z_{1}, \ldots, J_{m} Z_{m}\right), J_{1}, \ldots, J_{m}$ are the annihilator ideals of the sequence $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}$;
(iii) The annihilator ideals of $J$ are such that

$$
J_{i-1}:\left(a_{i}\right)=J_{i-1}, \quad i=1, \ldots, m-1
$$

and $J_{m-1}:\left(a_{m}\right)=J_{m}$, the last annihilator ideal.
Proof. (i) By theorem 2, the elements $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}$ form a $d$-sequence and then a strong $s$-sequence with respect to the reverse lexicographic order on the monomials in the variables $Z_{i}$ and with $Z_{m}>Z_{m-1}>$ $\ldots>Z_{1}$.
(ii) $\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)=S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / K$ and in $<(K)=\left(J_{2} Y_{2}, J_{3} Y_{3}, \ldots\right.$,
$\left.J_{m-1} Y_{m-1}, J_{m} Y_{m}\right)$ and $J_{i}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i-1}\right)$ for $i=2, \ldots, m-1$.

Let $J=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}, a_{m}\right) \subset S=R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{m}\right]$ be an ideal generated by linear forms that are an almost complete intersection $d$-sequence. Put $J_{m}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m-1}\right):\left(a_{m}\right)$. Then
(i) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\max \left\{\operatorname{dim} S+1, \operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{m}\right)+m\right\}$;
(ii) $\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \geq \min \left\{\operatorname{depth}\left(S / J_{m}\right)\right.$, $\left.\operatorname{depth}(R)+n+1\right\}$, with the equality if $S$ is Cohen-Macaulay; If $R=K\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{t}\right]$ and $\operatorname{deg} a_{i}=a$ for all $i$, then
(iii) $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{m-1} a^{i-1}+\mathrm{e}\left(S / J_{m}\right)$;
(iv)

$$
\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \leq \max \left\{(m-2)(a-1)+1, \operatorname{reg}\left(S / J_{m}\right)\right\}
$$

Proof. (i) The ideal $J$ is generated by a strong $s$-sequence, because it is generated by a $d$-sequence and

$$
(0)=J_{1} \subset J_{2} \subset \ldots \subset J_{m-1} \subset J_{m}
$$

(ii) The assertion follows by [4].
(iii) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right)=\operatorname{dim}\left(S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / J\right)=\operatorname{dim}\left(S\left[Z_{1}, \ldots, Z_{m}\right] / \mathrm{in}_{<}(J)\right)=$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\max \left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{r}\right)+r, r=0, \ldots, m\right\} \\
& =\max \left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{m-1}\right)+m-1, \operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{m}+m\right)\right\}= \\
& =\max \left\{\operatorname{dim}(S)-m+2+m-1, \operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{m}\right)+m\right\} \\
& =\max \left\{\operatorname{dim}(S)+1, \operatorname{dim}\left(S / J_{m}\right)+m\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

(iv) Since $\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(J)\right) \leq \max \left\{(m-2)(a-1)+1, \operatorname{reg}\left(S / J_{m}\right)\right\}$, the assertion follows from [7], Proposition 1.

Let $f=\sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i} Y_{i}$ be a linear form, $f \in R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]$. Suppose that ( 0 : $f)=\left(0: f^{2}\right)$, then we have:
(i) $I=(f)$ is generated by an $s$-sequence;
(ii) $\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)=S[Z] / J$, and $\mathrm{in}_{<}(J)=\left(I_{1} Z\right), I_{1}=(0: f)$ the annihilator ideal of the sequence $\{f\}$;

Proof. By the condition $(0: f)=\left(0: f^{2}\right)$, the sequence $\{f\}$ is a $d$-sequence, then $\{f\}$ is an $s$-sequence ([4], Corollary 3.3.), using the reverse lexicographic order on the monomials in the unique variable $Y$. In this case $I_{0}=(0), I_{1}=(0: f)=\left(0: f^{2}\right)$ is the unique annihilator ideal of $I$.

Let $f=\sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i} Y_{i}$ be a linear form, $f \in R\left[Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right]=S,(0: f)=\left(0: f^{2}\right)$ and let $I=(f)$. We have:
(i) $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)\right)=\operatorname{dim}(R)+n+1$;
(ii) $\mathrm{e}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)\right)=\mathrm{e}(S /(0: f))$;
(iii) If $R=K\left[X_{1}, X_{2}, \ldots, X_{m}\right]$, then

$$
\operatorname{depth}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)\right) \geq \operatorname{depth}(S /(0: f))+1 ;
$$

(iv) If $R=K\left[X_{1}, X_{2}, \ldots, X_{m}\right]$, then

$$
\operatorname{reg}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)\right) \leq \operatorname{reg}(S /(0: f))+1
$$

Proof. (i) $\operatorname{dim}\left(S / I_{0}\right)=\operatorname{dim}(S)$ and $\operatorname{dim}(S /(0: f))=\operatorname{dim}(S)$, hence $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{Sym}_{S}(I)\right)=\operatorname{dim}(S)+1$, by Proposition 2.1.
(ii) Using Proposition 2.1, the sum in (ii) has only one summand $\mathrm{e}\left(S / I_{1}\right)$
(iii) $\operatorname{depth}\left(S / I_{0}\right)=\operatorname{depth}(S)$, and depth $(S /(0: f)) \leq \operatorname{depth}(S)$, by Proposition 2.1.
(iv) See [7], Theorem 2.

Sequences of linear forms that are $d$-sequences are the simplest examples besides the regular sequences, that generate relation ideals of symmetric algebras and provide a fertile testing ground for general results. In particular, if $R=K\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}\right]$ and $I=\left(X_{1}^{a}, \ldots, X_{n}^{a}\right)$, then $\operatorname{Sym}(I)=\mathcal{R}(I)=$ $K\left[X_{1}, \ldots\right.$,
$\left.X_{n}\right] / J$, where $J$ is the ideal generated by all $2 \times 2$ minors $[i, j], i=1, \ldots, n$, $j=1,2, \ldots$, of the matrix $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}X_{1}^{a} & \ldots & X_{n}^{a} \\ Y_{1} & \ldots & Y_{n}\end{array}\right)$, $a$ integer, $a \geq 1$, that are linear forms in the variables $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}$. Therefore: Let $J$ be as before and let the minors be ordered lexicographically $[1,2]>[1,3]>\ldots>[n-1, n]$. Then $J$ is generated by an $s$-sequence of linear forms in the variables $Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ with respect to the reverse lexicographic order.

Proof. Any $d$-sequence is an $s$-sequence, then the assertion follows.
Acknowledgement. This work has been supported by "National Group for Algebraic and Geometric Structure and their Application (GNSAGAINDAM)".

## References

[1] L. Avramov, Complete Intersections and Symmetric Algebras, Reports Dept. Math. University of Stockholm, 7, 1980.
[2] W. Bruns, J. Herzog Cohen-Macaulay Rings, Rev. Ed., Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathemathics 39, Cambridge University Press, 1998.
[3] D. Eisenbud, S. Goto, Linear Free Resolutions and Minimal Multiplicity, Journal of Algebra, 88, 1984, pp. 89-133.
[4] J. Herzog, G. Restuccia, Z. Tang, s-Sequences and Symmetric Algebras, Manuscripta Math., 104, 2001, pp. 479 - 501.
[5] J. Herzog, A. Simis, W.V. Vasconcelos, Approximation Complexes of Blowing-up rings, Journal of Algebra, 74(2), 1982, pp. 466 - 493.
[6] C. Huneke, The Theory of d-Sequences and Powers of Ideals, Advanced in Math., 37, 1982, pp. $49-60$.
[7] G. Restuccia, Symmetric Algebras of Finitely Generated Graded Modules and $s$-Sequences, Rend. Sem. Mat., Univ. Pol. Torino, 64(4), 2006, pp. $479-496$.
[8] G. Restuccia, Formes Linéaires et Algèbres Symétriques, Bull. Sc. Math., II série, 110, 1986, pp. 391 - 410.
[9] R. H. Villarreal, Monomial Algebras, Marcel Dekker Inc., 2001.

# PERMANENT SOLUTIONS FOR SOME AXIAL MOTIONS OF GENERALIZED BURGERS FLUIDS IN CYLINDRICAL DOMAINS* 

Constantin Fetecau ${ }^{\dagger}$ Corina Fetecau ${ }^{\ddagger}$ Shehraz Akhtar ${ }^{\S}$


#### Abstract

Closed form permanent solutions are determined for two types of oscillating motions of generalized Burgers fluids through an infinite annulus. These solutions, presented in simple forms in terms of some modified Bessel functions, are periodic in time and independent of the initial conditions. They satisfy boundary conditions and governing equations and can easy be reduced to the solutions of Burgers, Oldroyd-B, Maxwell, second grade and linearly viscous fluids performing the same motions. Further, the solutions corresponding to motions through an infinite circular cylinder are obtained as limiting cases of previous solutions and some graphical representations are included.


MSC: 76A05
keywords: permanent solutions; axial motions; generalized Burgers fluid.

## 1 Introduction

Exact solutions for different initial-boundary value problems are important for many reasons. Such solutions, in addition to serve as approximations

[^3]to some motion problems of fluids, can be used as tests to verify numerical schemes that are developed to study more complex unsteady flows. Although the computer techniques can make a complete numerical integration of the governing equations, the accuracy of results can be established by a comparison with an exact solution.

The motion of a fluid can be induced by the application of a pressure gradient or a body force and by a solid wall that is moving or applies a shear stress to the fluid. If the fluid is initially at rest, its motion can become steady or remain unsteady. Starting solutions for unsteady motions which become steady or permanent in time are important for those who want to eliminate the transients from their rheological experiments. They describe the fluid motion some time after its initiation. After that time, when the transients disappear, the fluid moves according to the permanent solutions. However, as it results from the existing literature [1-5], the required time to reach the time-dependent permanent state for unsteady motions induced by oscillating boundaries is small enough.

Consequently, an important problem for such motions as well as for those due to an oscillating pressure gradient or induced by a solid wall that applies an oscillatory shear stress to the fluid is to determine the permanent components of their solutions. The first exact permanent solutions for oscillatory motions of non-Newtonian fluids seem to be those of Rajagopal [6, 7] and Rajagopal and Bhatnagar [8]. Of course, a part of these solutions have been extended to larger classes of fluids (see [9-13], for instance) but permanent solutions for some axial flows in cylindrical domains are lack in the existing literature.

The purpose of this work is to remove this drawback and to provide exact time-dependent permanent solutions corresponding to oscillatory motions of generalized Burgers fluids in cylindrical domains induced by an oscillating pressure gradient or a circular cylinder that applies a longitudinal oscillatory shear-stress to the fluid. These solutions, that are periodic in time and independent of the initial conditions, satisfy the boundary conditions and governing equations and can be immediately reduced to the similar solutions for Burgers, Oldroyd-B, Maxwell, second grade and linearly viscous fluids. Furthermore, they can be used to develop time-dependent permanent solutions for some rotational oscillatory motions of the same fluids.

## 2 Constitutive and governing equations

The Cauchy stress tensor $\mathbf{T}$ corresponding to an incompressible generalized Burgers fluid (IGBF) is given by [11]

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{T}=-p \mathbf{I}+\mathbf{S}, \mathbf{S}+\lambda_{1} \frac{\delta \mathbf{S}}{\delta t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\delta^{2} \mathbf{S}}{\delta t^{2}}=\mu\left(\mathbf{A}+\lambda_{3} \frac{\delta \mathbf{A}}{\delta t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\delta^{2} \mathbf{A}}{\delta t^{2}}\right), \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $-p \mathbf{I}$ is the indeterminate spherical stress, $\mathbf{S}$ is the extra-stress tensor, $\mathbf{A}=\mathbf{L}+\mathbf{L}^{T}$ is the first Rivlin-Ericksen tensor with $\mathbf{L}=\operatorname{grad} \mathbf{v}$ (the velocity gradient), $\mu$ is the dynamic viscosity, $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{3}\left(<\lambda_{1}\right)$ (see [14, Sect. 7]) are relaxation and retardation times while $\lambda_{2}$ and $\lambda_{4}$ are material constants whose dimension is the square of time. Further, the upper convected derivative of a frame-indifferent tensor

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\delta \mathbf{S}}{\delta t}=\dot{\mathbf{S}}-\mathbf{L S}-\mathbf{S L}^{T} \quad \text { or } \quad \frac{\delta \mathbf{A}}{\delta t}=\dot{\mathbf{A}}-\mathbf{L A}-\mathbf{A L}^{T}, \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

is also frame-indifferent. Here, the superposed dot denotes the material time derivative and the superscript ' $T$ ' indicates the transpose operation.

This fluid model contains as special cases Burgers, Oldroyd-B, Maxwell and linearly viscous fluids for $\lambda_{4}=0, \lambda_{2}=\lambda_{4}=0, \lambda_{2}=\lambda_{3}=\lambda_{4}=0$, respectively $\lambda_{1}=\lambda_{2}=\lambda_{3}=\lambda_{4}=0$. In some special flows, like those to be here considered, the governing equations corresponding to IGBF resemble those for second grade fluids. Consequently, the solutions corresponding to the above mentioned fluids performing the same motions have to be obtained as limiting cases of present solutions.

As the fluid is incompressible, it can undergo only isochoric motions and therefore $\operatorname{tr} \mathbf{A}=\operatorname{div} \mathbf{v}=0$. The balance of linear momentum in the absence of body forces becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\operatorname{grad} p+\operatorname{div} \mathbf{S}=\rho \dot{\mathbf{v}}, \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{v}$ denotes the fluid velocity and $\rho$ is its constant density. In the following we shall consider oscillatory motions of an IGBF in circular cylindrical domains. For such motions we assume a velocity field of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}=\mathbf{v}(r, t)=v(r, t) \mathbf{k}, \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{k}$ is the unit vector along the $z$-direction of the cylindrical coordinate system $r, \theta$ and $z$. For such motions, the constraint of incompressibility is
automatically satisfied. We also assume that the extra-stress tensor $\mathbf{S}$, as well as the velocity $\mathbf{v}$, is a function of $r$ and $t$ only.

If the fluid has been at rest up to the moment $t=0$, Eqs. $(1)_{2}$ and (4) imply $S_{r r}=S_{r \theta}=S_{\theta \theta}=S_{\theta z}=0$ while the non-trivial shear stress $\tau(r, t)=S_{r z}(r, t)$ satisfies the partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \tau(r, t)=\mu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial v(r, t)}{\partial r} . \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proceeding with the analysis, the momentum equation (3) reduces to $[8$, Eq. (22.3)]

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho \frac{\partial v(r, t)}{\partial t}=-\frac{\partial p}{\partial z}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}[r \tau(r, t)], \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\partial p / \partial z$ is at most a function of time.
By now eliminating $\tau(r, t)$ between Eqs. (5) and (6) we obtain the governing equation for velocity, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\right. & \left.\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial v(r, t)}{\partial t}=-\frac{1}{\rho}\left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial p}{\partial z}  \tag{7}\\
+ & \nu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right)\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}\right) v(r, t)
\end{align*}
$$

where $\nu=\mu / \rho$ is the kinematic viscosity of the fluid.

## 3 Motions due to an oscillating pressure gradient

Let us assume that an IGBF is at rest in an annular region between two infinite coaxial circular cylinders of radii $R_{0}$ and $R\left(>R_{0}\right)$. After time $t=0^{+}$an oscillating pressure gradient

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{\partial p}{\partial z}=P \cos (\omega t) \quad \text { or } \quad-\frac{\partial p}{\partial z}=P \sin (\omega t) \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

acts on the inner fluid along the common axis of cylinders. Here, $P$ is the amplitude and $\omega$ is the frequency of oscillations. The fluid is gradually moved and its velocity is of the form (4). In order to solve such a problem, we have to determine the solution of the linear partial differential equation (7) with the initial and boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
v(r, 0)=\left.\frac{\partial v(r, t)}{\partial t}\right|_{t=0}=\left.\frac{\partial^{2} v(r, t)}{\partial t^{2}}\right|_{t=0}=0, \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
v\left(R_{0}, t\right)=v(R, t)=0 \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

The starting solutions corresponding to such problems, as it results from the existing literature, are usually presented as a sum of permanent and transient solutions. They describe the fluid motion some time after its initiation. After this time, when the transients disappear, the fluid flows according to the permanent solutions which are independent of the initial conditions. Denoting by $v_{c}(r, t)$ and $v_{s}(r, t)$ the time-dependent permanent solutions corresponding to the cosine or sine oscillations of the pressure gradient and by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(r, t)=v_{c}(r, t)+i v_{s}(r, t) \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

the complex velocity, it results that $u(r, t)$ has to satisfy the partial differential equation

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial u(r, t)}{\partial t}=\frac{P}{\rho}\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}+i \omega \lambda_{1}\right) e^{i \omega t} \\
& +\nu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right)\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}\right) u(r, t) \tag{12}
\end{align*}
$$

with the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u\left(R_{0}, t\right)=u(R, t)=0 \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to the previous assumptions concerning the pressure gradient (see Eqs. (8)), we are looking for a solution of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(r, t)=U(r) e^{i \omega t} \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and determine $U(r)$ from Eq. (12) and the boundary conditions (13). Direct computations show that $U(r)$ has to satisfy the ordinary differential equation

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d^{2} U(r)}{d r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{d U(r)}{d r}- & \frac{i \omega}{\nu} \frac{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}+i \omega \lambda_{1}}{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}+i \omega \lambda_{3}} U(r) \\
& +\frac{P}{\mu} \frac{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}+i \omega \lambda_{1}}{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}+i \omega \lambda_{3}}=0 \tag{15}
\end{align*}
$$

with the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
U\left(R_{0}\right)=U(R)=0 \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

The general solution of Eq. (15) is of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(r)=C_{1} I_{0}(\gamma r)+C_{2} K_{0}(\gamma r)-i \frac{P}{\rho \omega} \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $I_{0}(\cdot)$ and $K_{0}(\cdot)$ are modified Bessel functions of the first and second kind, $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ are arbitrary constants, $-i P /(\rho \omega)$ is a particular solution of this equation and

$$
\gamma=\sqrt{\frac{i \omega}{\nu} \frac{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}+i \omega \lambda_{1}}{1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}+i \omega \lambda_{3}}}
$$

Using the boundary conditions (16) and bearing in mind the notation (11), we find that

$$
\begin{align*}
& v_{c}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Re}\left\{\left[1+A I_{0}(\gamma r)+B K_{0}(\gamma r)\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\},  \tag{18}\\
& v_{s}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Im}\left\{\left[1+A I_{0}(\gamma r)+B K_{0}(\gamma r)\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\}, \tag{19}
\end{align*}
$$

where Re and Im denote the real and imaginary parts of that which follows and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A=\frac{K_{0}(\gamma R)-K_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right)}{I_{0}(\gamma R) K_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right)-I_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{0}(\gamma R)}, \\
& B=\frac{I_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right)-I_{0}(\gamma R)}{I_{0}(\gamma R) K_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right)-I_{0}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{0}(\gamma R)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

A simple analysis clearly shows that $v_{c}(r, t)$ and $v_{s}(r, t)$, given by Eqs. (18) and (19), satisfy the boundary conditions (10).

Now, for completion, we also present the similar solutions

$$
\begin{align*}
& v_{c}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Re}\left\{\left[1-\frac{I_{0}(\gamma r)}{I_{0}(\gamma R)}\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\},  \tag{20}\\
& v_{s}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Im}\left\{\left[1-\frac{I_{0}(\gamma r)}{I_{0}(\gamma R)}\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\}, \tag{21}
\end{align*}
$$

corresponding to the same motions through an infinite circular cylinder of radius $R$. These solutions can be obtained as a limiting case of Eqs. (18) and (19) (by making $R_{0} \rightarrow 0$ ) or following the same way as before. By now letting $\lambda_{1}=\lambda_{2}=\lambda_{3}=\lambda_{4}=0$ into Eqs. (18), (19) or (20), (21), the solutions corresponding to linearly viscous fluids performing the same motion are obtained. Eqs. (20) and (21), for instance, become

$$
\begin{align*}
& v_{c}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Re}\left\{\left[1-\frac{I_{0}((i+1) r \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)})}{I_{0}((i+1) R \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)})}\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\},  \tag{22}\\
& v_{s}(r, t)=\frac{P}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Im}\left\{\left[1-\frac{I_{0}((i+1) r \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)})}{I_{0}((i+1) R \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)})}\right] e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\}, \tag{23}
\end{align*}
$$

In Figs. 1 and 2, for comparison, the profiles of velocities $v_{c}(r, t)$ and $v_{s}(r, t)$ corresponding to motions through an infinite circular cylinder are presented for different values of physical parameters. As expected, the velocity diagrams corresponding to generalized Burgers fluids tend to superpose over those of Newtonian fluids when $\lambda_{i} \rightarrow 0(i=1,2,3,4)$.


Fig. 1. Profiles of the velocity $\mathrm{v}_{\mathrm{c}}(r, t)$ given by Eqs. (20) and (22).


Fig. 2. Profiles of the velocity $\mathrm{v}_{\mathrm{s}}(r, t)$ given by Eqs. (21) and (23).

## 4 Motion induced by an infinite cylinder that applies an oscillatory longitudinal shear stress to the fluid

The flow between circular cylinders or through a cylinder is one of the most important and interesting problems of motion. It has been intensively studied and during recent years many papers of this type have been published. In the following, unlike the previous works, we shall consider the motion of an IGBF produced by an oscillatory shear stress on the boundary.

### 4.1 Motion between circular cylinders

Consider again an IGBF at rest in the same annular region as before. At time $t=0^{+}$the outer cylinder of radius $R$ applies an oscillatory longitudinal shear stress $f \sin (\omega t)$ or $f \cos (\omega t)$ to the fluid while the inner one of radius $R_{0}$ is fixed. Owing to the shear the fluid between cylinders is gradually moved and its velocity is again of the form (4). Assuming that the extra-stress $\mathbf{S}$ is also a function of $r$ and $t$ only, we find the same partial differential equation (5) for the non-trivial shear stress $\tau(r, t)$. In the absence of a pressure gradient in the flow direction, the motion equations reduce to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho \frac{\partial v(r, t)}{\partial t}=\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}[r \tau(r, t)] \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

while the boundary conditions are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau\left(R_{0}, t\right)=0 ; \quad \tau(R, t)=f \cos (\omega t) \quad \text { or } \quad \tau(R, t)=f \sin (\omega t) \tag{25}
\end{equation*}
$$

In order to solve a problem with shear stress on the boundary, we eliminate the velocity $v(r, t)$ between Eqs. (5) and (24) and find that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial \tau(r, t)}{\partial t} \\
& =\nu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right)\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}-\frac{1}{r^{2}}\right) \tau(r, t) \tag{26}
\end{align*}
$$

Denoting by $\tau_{c}(r, t)$ and $\tau_{s}(r, t)$ the time-dependent permanent shear stresses corresponding to the motion due to the cosine or sine oscillations of the shear stress on the boundary and by

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(r, t)=\tau_{c}(r, t)+i \tau_{s}(r, t) \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

the complex shear stress, we attain to the next boundary value problem

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial T(r, t)}{\partial t}  \tag{28}\\
& =\nu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right)\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}-\frac{1}{r^{2}}\right) T(r, t) \\
& \quad T\left(R_{0}, t\right)=0, T(R, t)=f e^{i \omega t} \tag{29}
\end{align*}
$$

We now seek a separable solution of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(r, t)=F(r) e^{i \omega t} \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and follow the same way as before. A simple analysis shows that the function $F(\cdot)$ has to satisfy the Bessel equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
s^{2} \frac{d^{2} F(s)}{d s^{2}}+s \frac{d F(s)}{d s}-\left(1+s^{2}\right) F(s)=0 \tag{31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s=\gamma r$. The general solution of Eq. (31) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(s)=C_{1} I_{1}(s)+C_{2} K_{1}(s) \tag{32}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ are again arbitrary constants while $I_{1}(\cdot)$ and $K_{1}(\cdot)$ are modified Bessel functions of one order.

Introducing Eq. (32) into (30) and using the boundary conditions (29), we find that

$$
\begin{align*}
\tau_{c}(r, t) & =f \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma r)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma r)}{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma R)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\}  \tag{33}\\
\tau_{s}(r, t) & =f \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma r)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma r)}{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma R)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\} \tag{34}
\end{align*}
$$

Direct computations show that $\tau_{c}(r, t)$ and $\tau_{s}(r, t)$ satisfy both the boundary conditions and the governing equation (26) (see for instance [15, Eq. (1.1)]).

### 4.2 Motion through a circular cylinder

The solutions corresponding to the motion within an infinite circular cylinder that applies an oscillatory longitudinal shear stress $f \cos (\omega t)$ or $f \sin (\omega t)$ to the fluid, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{c}(r, t)=f \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{I_{1}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\}, \tau_{s}(r, t)=f \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{I_{1}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\} \tag{35}
\end{equation*}
$$

can be obtained following the same way as before and bearing in mind the fact that the fluid velocity has to remain finite along the axis of cylinder. The solutions (35) can be also obtained as a limiting case of Eqs. (33) and (34) when $R_{0} \rightarrow 0$. The velocity fields corresponding to these motions, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
v_{c}(r, t) & =\frac{f}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{I_{0}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} \gamma e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\} \\
v_{s}(r, t) & =\frac{f}{\rho \omega} \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{I_{0}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} \gamma e^{i(\omega t-\pi / 2)}\right\} \tag{36}
\end{align*}
$$

are immediately obtained introducing Eqs. (35) into (24) and integrating with respect to $t$.

Finally, for completion, the diagrams of the shear stresses $\tau_{c}(r, t)$ and $\tau_{s}(r, t)$ corresponding to motions through an infinite circular cylinder that applies oscillating shears to the fluid are depicted in Figs. 3 and 4 both for Newtonian and generalized Burgers fluids. It is clearly seen from these figures that the shear stress profiles corresponding to generalized Burgers fluids tend to superpose over those of Newtonian fluids when $\lambda_{i} \rightarrow 0(i=1,2,3,4)$.


Fig. 3. Profiles of the shear stress $\tau_{\mathrm{c}}(r, t)$ given by Eq. (35) .


### 4.3 Applications to oscillatory rotational motions

Motions between rotating cylinders have been intensively studied since Taylor [16] reported the results of his famous investigations. Here, we consider the rotational motion of an IGBF due to the outer cylinder that oscillates around its axis with the angular velocities $W \cos (\omega t)$ or $W \sin (\omega t)$. In this case the velocity of the fluid is of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}=\mathbf{v}(r, t)=w(r, t) \mathbf{e}_{\theta} \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{e}_{\theta}$ is the unit vector along the $\theta$-direction. The constraint of incompressibility is again satisfied and the governing equation for the fluid velocity, namely [12, Eq. (13)]

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(1+\lambda_{1} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{2} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right) \frac{\partial w(r, t)}{\partial t} \\
& =\nu\left(1+\lambda_{3} \frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\lambda_{4} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t^{2}}\right)\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial r^{2}}+\frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}-\frac{1}{r^{2}}\right) w(r, t) \tag{38}
\end{align*}
$$

has the same form as Eq. (26) for the shear stress $\tau(r, t)$.
As the associated boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
w\left(R_{0}, t\right)=0 ; w(R, t)=W \cos (\omega t) \quad \text { or } \quad w(R, t)=W \sin (\omega t) \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

are identical to those from Eqs. (25), it results that the time-dependent permanent solutions corresponding to such motions are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& w_{c}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma r)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma r)}{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma R)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\}  \tag{40}\\
& w_{s}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma r)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma r)}{K_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) I_{1}(\gamma R)-I_{1}\left(\gamma R_{0}\right) K_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\} \tag{41}
\end{align*}
$$

Of course, the similar solutions corresponding to the motion through an infinite circular cylinder, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{c}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{I_{1}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\}, w_{s}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{I_{1}(\gamma r)}{I_{1}(\gamma R)} e^{i \omega t}\right\} \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

are immediately obtained using Eqs. (35).

## 5 Conclusions

In this note two unsteady oscillatory motions of an IGBF in an annulus are considered and closed form time-dependent permanent solutions are established in terms of the modified Bessel functions $I_{0}(\cdot), I_{1}(\cdot), K_{0}(\cdot)$ and $K_{1}(\cdot)$.

These solutions, which are periodic in time and independent of the initial conditions, satisfy the boundary conditions and governing equations and can be easy reduced to the similar solutions for Burgers, Oldroyd-B, Maxwell, second grade and linearly viscous fluids performing the same motions. By now taking $\lambda_{1}=\lambda_{2}=\lambda_{3}=\lambda_{4}=0$ into Eqs. (42), for instance, the solutions

$$
\begin{align*}
& w_{c}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Re}\left\{\frac{I_{1}[(1+i) r \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)]}}{I_{1}[(1+i) R \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)]}} e^{i \omega t}\right\}, \\
& w_{s}(r, t)=W \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{I_{1}[(1+i) r \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)]}}{I_{1}[(1+i) R \sqrt{\omega /(2 \nu)]}} e^{i \omega t}\right\}, \tag{43}
\end{align*}
$$

corresponding to Newtonian fluids (see [10, Eqs. (35) 2 ]) are recovered. Furthermore, in the view of some asymptotic expansions of modified Bessel functions (see for instance Bandelli and Rajagopal [17, Sect. 4], all these solutions can be well enough approximated by simple expressions containing the elementary functions $\cos (\cdot), \sin (\cdot), \cosh (\cdot)$ and $\sinh (\cdot)$. Indeed, following [4] we can show that the shear stress $\tau_{c}(r, t)$ given by Eq. (35) ${ }_{1}$ can be approximated by

$$
\begin{align*}
& f \sqrt{\frac{R}{r}} \cos (\omega t) \frac{\cosh [(r+R) a] \cos [(r-R) b]-\cosh [(r-R) a] \sin [(r+R) b]}{\cosh (2 R a)-\sin (2 R b)}  \tag{44}\\
& -f \sqrt{\frac{R}{r}} \sin (\omega t) \frac{\sinh [(r+R) a] \sin [(r-R) b]+\sinh [(r-R) a] \cos [(r+R) b]}{\cosh (2 R a)-\sin (2 R b)}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a=\sqrt{\delta} \cos \left(\frac{\varphi}{2}\right), b=\sqrt{\delta} \sin \left(\frac{\varphi}{2}\right), \\
& \varphi=\operatorname{arctg}\left(\frac{\omega^{2} \lambda_{1} \lambda_{3}+\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}\right)\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}\right)}{\omega \lambda_{3}\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}\right)-\omega \lambda_{1}\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}\right)}\right) \\
& \delta=\frac{\omega}{\nu} \frac{\sqrt{\left[\omega \lambda_{3}\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}\right)-\omega \lambda_{1}\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}\right)\right]^{2}+\left[\omega^{2} \lambda_{1} \lambda_{3}+\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{2}\right)\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}\right)\right]^{2}}}{\left(1-\omega^{2} \lambda_{4}\right)^{2}+\omega^{2} \lambda_{3}^{2}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, it is worth pointing out that based on a simple remark regarding the governing equations corresponding to the shear stress $\tau(r, t)$ in longitudinal motions and the velocity $\omega(r, t)$ in the case of rotational motions in cylindrical domains, some important applications of our results have been brought to light.

Acknowledgement. The authors would like to express their sincere gratitude to reviewers for their careful assessments, fruitful remarks and valuable suggestions regarding the earlier version of the paper. S. Akhtar is also highly thankful and grateful to the Abdus Salam School of Mathematical Sciences, GC University Lahore, Pakistan for generous support and facilitating this research work.

## References

[1] M.E. Erdogan, A note on an unsteady flow of a viscous fluid due to an oscillating plane wall, Int. J. Non-Linear Mech., 35: 1-6, 2000.
[2] T. Hayat, M.F. Afzad, C. Fetecau, A.A. Hendi, Slip effects on the oscillatory flow in a porous medium, J. Porous Media, 14 : 481-493, 2011.
[3] Corina Fetecau, M. Jamil, C. Fetecau, I. Siddique, A note on the second problem of Stokes for Maxwell fluids, Int. J. Non-Linear Mech., 44 : 1085-1090, 2009.
[4] Corina Fetecau, T. Hayat, C. Fetecau, Starting solutions for oscillating motions of Oldroyd-B fluids in cylindrical domains, J. Non-Newtonian Fluid Mech., 153: 191-201, 2008.
[5] Corina Fetecau, T. Hayat, M. Khan, C. Fetecau, A note on longitudinal oscillations of a generalized Burgers fluid in cylindrical domains, Int. J. Non-Newtonian Fluid Mech., $165: 350-361,2010$.
[6] K.R. Rajagopal, A note on unsteady unidirectional flows of a nonNewtonian fluid, Int. J. Non-Linear Mech., 17 : 369-373, 1992.
[7] K.R. Rajagopal, Longitudinal and torsional oscillations of a rod in a non-Newtonian fluid, Acta Mech., 40 : 281 - 285, 1983.
[8] K.R. Rajagopal, R.K. Bhatnagar, Exact solutions for some simple flows of an Oldroyd-B fluid, Acta Mech., 113 : 233-239, 1995.
[9] T. Hayat, C. Fetecau, S. Asghar, Some simple flows of a Burgers' fluid, Int. J. Eng. Sci., 44 : 1423 - 1431, 2006.
[10] D. Vieru, W. Akhtar, Corina Fetecau, C. Fetecau, Starting solution for the oscillating motion of a Maxwell fluid in cylindrical domains, Meccanica, 42 : $573-583,2007$.
[11] C. Fetecau, T. Hayat, Corina Fetecau, Steady-state solutions for some simple flows of generalized Burgers fluids, Int. J. Non-Linear Mech., 41, $880-887,2006$.
[12] D. Tong, H. Hu, Starting solutions for oscillating motions of a generalized Burgers' fluid in cylindrical domains, Acta Mech., 214:395-407, 2010.
[13] Corina Fetecau, Qammar Rubbab, Shahraz Akhter, Constantin Fetecau, New methods to provide exact solutions for some unidirectional motions of rate type fluids, Thermal Science, DOI: 10.2298/TSCI130225130F.
[14] K.R. Rajagopal, A.R. Srinivasa, A thermodynamic frame work for rate type fluid models, J. Non-Newtonian Fluid Mech., 88 : 207 - 227, 2010.
[15] K.P. Tolstov, Serii Fourier. Editura Tehnica, 1995 (translation from Russian).
[16] G.I. Taylor, Stability of a viscous liquid contained between two rotating cylinders, Phil. Trans. R. Soc. Lond., A $223: 289-343,1923$.
[17] R. Bandelli, K.R. Rajagopal, Start-up flows of second grade fluids in domains with one finite dimension, Int. J. Non-Linear Mech., 30 : 817 839, 1995.

# Higher Order Boundary Value Problem for Impulsive Differential Inclusions* 

Johnny Henderson ${ }^{\dagger}$ Abdelghani Ouahab ${ }^{\ddagger}$ Samia Youcefi ${ }^{\S}$


#### Abstract

In this paper, we present some existence results for the higher order impulsive differential inclusion: $$
\left\{\begin{array}{r} x^{(n)}(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right), \text { a.e. } t \in J=[0, \infty), t \neq t_{k} \\ k=1, \ldots \\ \left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=I_{i k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right), i=0,1, \ldots, n-1, \\ \\ k=1, \ldots, \\ x^{(i)}(0)=x_{0 i},(i=0,1, \ldots, n-2), x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=\beta x^{(n-1)}(0) \end{array}\right.
$$ where $F: \mathbb{R}_{+} \times E \times E \times \cdots \times E \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(E)$ is a multifunction, $x_{0 i} \in$ $E, i=0,1, \ldots, n-1, \quad 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<\cdots, \lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} t_{k}=$ $\infty, I_{k i} \in C(E \times \cdots \times E, E)(i=1, \ldots, n-1, k=1, \ldots),,\left.\Delta x\right|_{t=t_{k}}=$ $x\left(t_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(t_{k}^{-}\right), x\left(t_{k}^{+}\right)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} x\left(t_{k}+h\right)$ and $x\left(t_{k}^{-}\right)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} x\left(t_{k}-h\right)$ represent the right and left limits of $x(t)$ at $t=t_{k}$, respectively, $x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} x^{(n-1)}(t)$, and $(E,|\cdot|)$ is real separable Banach space. We present some existence results when the right-hand side multivalued nonlinearity can be either convex or nonconvex.


MSC: 34K45, 34A60, 47D62, 35R12

[^4]keywords: Impulsive differential inclusions, multi-valued maps, decomposable set, fixed point.

## 1 Introduction

Differential equations with impulses were considered for the first time in the 1960's by Milman and Myshkis [20]. Their work was followed by a period of active research, mostly in Eastern Europe during 1960-1970, culminating with the monograph by Halanay and Wexler [15].

The dynamics of many evolving processes are subject to abrupt changes, such as shocks, harvesting and natural disasters. These phenomena involve short-term perturbations from continuous and smooth dynamics, whose duration is negligible in comparison with the duration of an entire evolution. In models involving such perturbations, it is natural to assume these perturbations act instantaneously or in the form of "impulses". As a consequence, impulsive differential equations have been developed in modeling impulsive problems in physics, population dynamics, ecology, biotechnology, industrial robotics, pharmcokinetics, optimal control, and so forth. Again, associated with this development, a theory of impulsive differential equations has been given extensive attention. Works recognized as landmark contributions include [14, 21]. The existence theory of impulsive differential equations in Banach space was studied by Guo [11, 12, 13]. There are also many different studies in biology and medicine for which impulsive differential equations are good models (see for instance, [2] and the references therein).

In recent years, many examples of differential equations with impulses with fixed moments have flourished in several contexts. In the periodic treatment of some diseases, impulses correspond to administration of a drug treatment or a missing product. In environmental sciences, seasonal changes of the water level of artificial reservoirs are often considered as impulses.

More precisely, we will consider $n$th order impulsive differential inclusions of the form,

$$
\begin{gather*}
x^{(n)}(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right), \quad \text { a.e. } t \in J=[0, \infty) \backslash\left\{t_{1}, \ldots\right\}  \tag{1.1}\\
\left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=I_{i k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right), i=0,1, \ldots, n-1, k=1, \ldots,  \tag{1.3}\\
x^{(i)}(0)=x_{0 i}, \quad(i=0,1, \ldots, n-2,), x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=\beta x^{(n-1)}(0), \tag{1.2}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $F: \mathbb{R}_{+} \times E \times E \times \cdots \times E \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(E)$ is a multifunction, $x_{0 i} \in E, i=$ $0,1, \ldots, n-1, \quad 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<\cdots, \lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} t_{k}=\infty, I_{i k} \in C(E \times$
$\cdots \times E, E)(i=1, \ldots, n-1, k=1, \ldots),,\left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{+}\right)-x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{-}\right)$, where $x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{+}\right)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}+h\right)$ and $x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{-}\right)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}-h\right)$ represent the right and left limits of $x^{(i)}(t)$ at $t=t_{k}$, respectively, $x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=$ $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} x^{(n-1)}(t)$, and $(E,|\cdot|)$ is real separable Banach space.

Our goal in this work is to give some existence results when the righthand side multi-valued nonlinearity can be either convex or nonconvex. Some auxiliary results from multi-valued analysis are gathered together in Section 2. In the Section 3, we give an existence result based on nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder type for condensing maps (in the convex case). In Section 4, some existence results are obtained based on the nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder type and on the Covitz and Nadler fixed point theorem for contractive multi-valued maps (in the nonconvex case).

## 2 Preliminaries

In this section, we introduce notations, definitions, and preliminary facts from multivalued analysis which are used throughout this paper.

Let $(X, d)$ be a metric space and $Y$ be a subset of $X$. We denote:

- $\mathcal{P}(X)=\{Y \subset X: Y \neq \emptyset\}$ and
- $\mathcal{P}_{p}(X)=\{Y \in \mathcal{P}(X): Y$ has the property " p " $\}$, where p could be: $c l=$ closed, $b=$ bounded, $c p=$ copmact, $c v=$ convex, etc.

Thus

- $\mathcal{P}_{c l}(X)=\{Y \in \mathcal{P}(X): Y$ closed $\}$,
- $\mathcal{P}_{b}(X)=\{Y \in \mathcal{P}(X): Y$ bounded $\}$,
- $\mathcal{P}_{c v}(X)=\{Y \in \mathcal{P}(X): Y$ convex $\}$, where $X$ is a Banach space
- $\mathcal{P}_{c p}(X)=\{Y \in \mathcal{P}(X): Y$ compact $\}$,
- $\mathcal{P}_{c v, c p}(X)=\mathcal{P}_{c v}(X) \cap \mathcal{P}_{c p}(X)$, etc.

In what follows, by $E$ we shall denote a separable Banach space over the field of real numbers $\mathbb{R}$, and by $\bar{J}$ a closed bounded interval in $\mathbb{R}$. We let

$$
C(\bar{J}, E)=\{x: \bar{J} \rightarrow E \mid x \text { is continuous }\}
$$

We consider the Tchebyshev norm:

$$
\|\cdot\|_{\infty}: C(\bar{J}, E) \rightarrow[0, \infty)
$$

defined as follows:

$$
\|x\|_{\infty}=\max \{|x(t)|: t \in \bar{J}\}
$$

where $|\cdot|$ stands for the norm in $E$. Then $\left(C(\bar{J}, E),\|\cdot\|_{\infty}\right)$ is a Banach space.

The following are classical concepts:
A function $x: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow E$ is called measurable provided for every open $U \subset E$ the set:

$$
x^{-1}(U)=\left\{t \in \mathbb{R}_{+} \mid x(t) \in U\right\}
$$

is Lebesgue measurable.
We shall say that a measurable function $x: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow E$ is Bochner integrable provided the function $|x|: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ is Lebesgue integrable function.

We let:

$$
L^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right)=\left\{x: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow E \mid x \text { is Bochner integrable }\right\}
$$

Let us add that two functions $x_{1}, x_{2}: J \rightarrow E$ such that the set $\left\{x_{1}(t) \neq\right.$ $\left.x_{2}(t) \mid t \in \mathbb{R}_{+}\right\}$has Lebesgue measure equal to zero are considered as equal.

Then, we are able to define on $L^{1}$,

$$
\|x\|_{L^{1}}=\int_{0}^{\infty}|x(t)| d t
$$

It is well-known that:

$$
\left(L^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right),\|\cdot\|_{L^{1}}\right)
$$

is a Banach space.
Definition 1. Let $(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$ be a finite measure space. $A$ subset $\mathcal{C}$ in $L^{1}(\Omega, \Sigma$, $\mu)$ is called uniformly integrable if, for each $\epsilon>0$ there exists $\delta(\epsilon)>0$ such that, for each measurable subset $\mathcal{R} \subset \Sigma$ whose $\mu(\mathcal{R})<\delta(\epsilon)$, we have

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}}|f(\omega)| d \mu(\omega)<\epsilon
$$

Remark 1. Let $\mathcal{C} \subset L^{1}(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$, then:
(i) if $\mu(\Omega)<\infty$ and $\mathcal{C}$ is bounded in $L^{p}(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$ where $p>1$, then $\mathcal{C}$ is uniformly integrable.
(ii) if there exist $p \in L^{1}\left(\Omega, \mu, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
|f(\omega)| \leq p(\omega), \text { for each } f \in \mathcal{C} \text { and a.e. } \omega \in \Omega \text {, }
$$

then $\mathcal{C}$ is uniformly integrable.
Let $K \subset X$. We define $\mathcal{K}$ by

$$
\mathcal{K}=\left\{f \in L^{1}(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu): f(\omega) \in K \text { a.e. } \omega \in \Omega\right\} .
$$

Theorem 1. [8] Let $(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$ be a finite measure space and $X$ a Banach space, and let $\mathcal{K}$ be a bounded uniformly integrable subset of $L^{1}(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$. Suppose that given $\epsilon>0$ there exists a measurable set $\Omega_{\epsilon}$ and a weakly compact set $K_{\epsilon} \subset X$ such that $\mu\left(\Omega \backslash \Omega_{\epsilon}\right)<\epsilon$ and for each $f \in \mathcal{K}, f(\omega) \in K_{\epsilon}$ for almost all $\omega \in \Omega_{\epsilon}$. Then $\mathcal{K}$ is a relatively weakly compact subset of $L^{1}(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$.

Next we present a new result due to Vrabie [23].
Theorem 2. Let $\left(\Omega, \sum, \mu\right)$ be a $\sigma$-finite measure space, let $\left\{\Omega_{k}: k \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ be a subfamily of $\sum$ such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
\mu\left(\Omega_{k}\right)<\infty & \text { for } k=0,1, \ldots, \\
\Omega_{k} \subset \Omega_{k+1} & \text { for } k=0,1, \ldots, \\
\cup_{k=0}^{\infty} \Omega_{k}=\Omega, &
\end{array}\right.
$$

and let $X$ be a Banach space. Let $K \subset L^{1}(\Omega, \mu, X)$ be bounded and uniformly integrable in $L^{1}\left(\Omega_{k}, \mu, X\right)$, for $k=0,1, \ldots$, and

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\Omega \backslash \Omega_{k}}|f(\omega)| d \mu(\omega)=0
$$

uniformly for $f \in K$. If for each $\gamma>0$ and each $k \in \mathbb{N}$, there exist a weakly compact subset $C_{\gamma, k} \subset X$ and a measurable subset $\Omega_{\gamma, k} \subset \Omega_{k}$ with $\mu\left(\Omega \backslash \Omega_{\gamma, k}\right) \leq \gamma$ and $f\left(\Omega_{\gamma, k}\right) \subset C_{\gamma, k}$ for all $f \in K$, then $K$ is weakly relatively compact in $L^{1}\left(\Omega, \sum, \mu\right)$.

### 2.1 Multi-valued analysis

Let $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ be a Banach space. A multi-valued map $G: X \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(X)$ has convex (closed) values if $G(x)$ is convex (closed) for all $x \in X$. We say that $G$ is bounded on bounded sets if $G(B)$ is bounded in $X$ for each bounded set $B$ of $X$, i.e., $\left.\sup _{x \in B}\{\sup \{\|y\|: y \in G(x)\}\}<\infty\right)$. The map $G$ is called
upper semi-continuous (u.s.c.) on $X$ if for each $x_{0} \in X$ the set $G\left(x_{0}\right)$ is a nonempty, subset of $X$ and if for each open set $N$ of $X$ containing $G\left(x_{0}\right)$, there exists an open neighborhood $M$ of $x_{0}$ such that $G(M) \subseteq N$. Also, $G$ is said to be completely continuous if $G(B)$ is relatively compact for every bounded subset $B \subseteq X$. If the multi-valued map $G$ is completely continuous with nonempty compact values, then $G$ is u.s.c. if and only if $G$ has a closed graph (i.e., $x_{n} \rightarrow x_{*}, y_{n} \rightarrow y_{*}, y_{n} \in G\left(x_{n}\right)$ imply $\left.y_{*} \in G\left(x_{*}\right)\right)$. Finally, we say that $G$ has a fixed point if there exists $x \in X$ such that $x \in G(x)$.

A multi-valued map $G: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c l}(X)$ is said to be measurable if for each $x \in E$, the function $Y: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X$ defined by

$$
Y(t)=\operatorname{dist}(x, G(t))=\inf \{\|x-z\|: z \in G(t)\}
$$

is Lebesgue measurable.
Definition 2. A measure of noncompactness $\beta$ is called
(a) Monotone if $\Omega_{0}, \Omega_{1} \in \mathcal{P}(X) \Omega_{0} \subset \Omega_{1}$ implies $\beta\left(\Omega_{0}\right) \leq \beta\left(\Omega_{1}\right)$.
(b) Nonsingular if $\beta(\{a\} \cup \Omega)=\beta(\Omega)$ for every $a \in X, \Omega \in \mathcal{P}(X)$.
(c) Invariant with respect to the union with compact sets if $\beta(K \cup \Omega)=$ $\beta(\Omega)$ for every relatively compact set $K \subset X$ and $\Omega \in \mathcal{P}(X)$.
(d) Real if $\mathcal{A}=\overline{\mathbb{R}}_{+}=[0, \infty]$ and $\beta(\Omega)<\infty$ for every bounded $\Omega$.
(e) Semi-additive if $\beta\left(\Omega_{0} \cup \Omega_{1}\right)=\max \left(\beta\left(\Omega_{0}\right), \beta\left(\Omega_{1}\right)\right)$ for every $\Omega_{0}, \Omega_{1} \in$ $\mathcal{P}(X)$.
(f) Lower-additive if $\beta$ is real and $\beta\left(\Omega_{0}+\Omega_{1}\right) \leq \beta\left(\Omega_{0}\right)+\beta\left(\Omega_{1}\right)$ for every $\Omega_{0}, \Omega_{1} \in \mathcal{P}(X)$.
(g) Regular if the condition $\beta(\Omega)=0$ is equivalent to the relative compactness of $\Omega$.

Definition 3. A sequence $\left\{v_{n}\right\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subset L^{1}([a, b], X)$ is said to be semi-compact if
(a) it is integrably bounded, i.e. if there exists $\psi \in L^{1}\left([a, b], \mathbb{R}^{+}\right)$such that

$$
\left\|v_{n}(t)\right\| \leq \psi(t), \text { for a.e. } t \in[a, b] \text { and every } n \in \mathbb{N}
$$

(b) the image sequence $\left\{v_{n}(t)\right\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is relatively compact in $X$ for a.e. $t \in$ $[a, b]$.

Lemma 1. [18] Every semi-compact sequence in $L^{1}([a, b], X)$ is weakly compact in $L^{1}([a, b], X)$.

Lemma 2. [18] If $F: X \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(Y)$ is u.s.c., then $\mathcal{G} r(F)$ is a closed subset of $X \times Y$ Conversely, if $F$ is locally compact and has nonempty compact values and a closed graph, then it is u.s.c.

Next we state the nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder type for condensing maps.

Lemma 3. [18] Let $V \subset X$ be a bounded open neighborhood of zero and $N: \bar{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c p, c v}(X)$ a $\beta$-condensing u.s.c. multi-map, where $\beta$ is a nonsingular measure of noncompactness defied on subsets of $X$. If $N$ satisfies the boundary condition

$$
x \notin N(x)
$$

for all $x \in \partial V$ and $0<\lambda<1$, then the set $\operatorname{Fix}(N)=\{x \in V, x \in N(x)\}$ is nonempty.

Lemma 4. [18] Let $W$ be a closed bounded convex subset of a Banach space $X$ and $\mathcal{F}: \mathcal{W} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c p}(W)$ be a closed
$\beta$-condensing multi-map where $\beta$ is a monotone MNC on $X$. Then Fix $(F)$ is nonempty and compact.

For more details on multi-valued maps we refer to the books Hu and Papageorgiou [17] and Kamenskii et al [18].

## 3 Convex case

Before stating the results of this section we consider the following spaces.

$$
\begin{aligned}
P C= & \left\{x: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow E \mid x\left(t_{k}^{-}\right), x\left(t_{k}^{+}\right) \text {exist with } x\left(t_{k}\right)=x\left(t_{k}^{-}\right),\right. \\
& \left.x_{k} \in C\left(J_{k}, E\right), k=1, \ldots\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $x_{k}$ is the restriction of $x$ to $J_{k}=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right], k=0, \ldots$

$$
D P C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right)=\left\{x \in P C: \sup _{t \in J} e^{-t}|x(t)|<\infty\right\},
$$

It is clear that $D P C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right)$ is a Banach space with norm

$$
\|x\|_{B}=\sup _{t \in \mathbb{R}_{+}} e^{-t}|x(t)| .
$$

$$
\begin{gathered}
P C^{(n-1)}=\left\{x \in P C\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right) \mid x^{(i)} \text { exist and it is continuous at } t \neq t_{k},\right. \\
i=1, \ldots, n-1, \text { and } x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{-}\right), x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{+}\right) \text {exist with } \\
\left.x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}^{-}\right)=x^{(i)}\left(t_{k}\right), k=1, \ldots\right\} \\
D P C^{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right)=\left\{y \in P C^{(n-1)}: \sup _{t \in J} e^{-t}\left|x^{(i)}(t)\right|<\infty \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1\right\}
\end{gathered}
$$

is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|x\|_{D}=\max \left(\|x\|_{B},\left\|x^{\prime}\right\|_{B}, \ldots,\left\|x^{(n-1)}\right\|_{B}\right)
$$

Set

$$
\begin{aligned}
A C(J, E)= & \{y:[a, b] \rightarrow E \text { absolutely continuous, } \\
& \left.y(t)=y(a)+\int_{a}^{t} y^{\prime}(s) d s, \text { and } y^{\prime} \in L^{1}([a, b], E)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

in general, on interval $[a, b]$, there need not exist $y^{\prime}(t)$, for almost all $t \in[a, b]$ with $y^{\prime} \in L^{1}([a, b], E)$ and

$$
y(t)=y(a)+\int_{a}^{t} y^{\prime}(s) d s
$$

It is so if $E$ satisfies the Radon-Nikodym property, in particular, if E is reflexive. Moreover, we have the following.

Lemma 5. [1] Suppose $y:[a, b] \rightarrow E$ is absolutely continuous, $y^{\prime}$ exists a.e., and

$$
\left|y^{\prime}(t)\right| \leq l(t) \text { a.e. for some } l \in L^{1}([a, b], E)
$$

Then $y^{\prime} \in L^{1}([a, b], E)$

$$
\int_{\tau}^{t} y^{\prime}(s) d s=y(t)-(\tau), \quad t, \tau \in[a, b]
$$

Let us start by defining what we mean by a solution of problem (1.1)(1.3).

Definition 4. We say that the function $x \in P C^{(n-1)}$ is a solution of the system (1.1)-(1.3) if $x_{0 i}=x^{(i)}(0), i=0, \ldots, n-1$ and there exists $v(\cdot) \in$ $L^{1}([0, \infty), E)$, such that $v(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)$ a.e $[0, \infty)$, and such that $x^{(n)}(t)=v(t)$, and the impulsive systems $\left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=I_{k i}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$, $i=0,1, \ldots, n-1, k=1,2, \ldots$, are satisfied.

A fundamental notation for a solution of problem (1.1)-(1.3) is given by the following auxiliary result.

Lemma 6. [13]. Let $f \in L^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, E\right)$ and $\beta \in \mathbb{R} \backslash\{1\}$. Then $x$ is the unique solution of the impulsive boundary value problem,

$$
\begin{gather*}
x^{(n)}(t)=f(t), \quad t \in J:=[0, \infty), t \neq t_{k}, \quad k=1, \ldots,  \tag{3.1}\\
\left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=I_{k i}\left(x\left(t_{k}^{-}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right), i=0, \ldots, n-1, k=1, \ldots,  \tag{3.3}\\
x^{(i)}(0)=x_{0 i}, i=0, \ldots, n-1, x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=\beta x^{(n-1)}(0) \tag{3.2}
\end{gather*}
$$

if and only if $x$ is a solution of impulsive integral differential equation
$x(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}\sum_{j=0}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j}}{j!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} f(s) d s \\ +\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\ +\frac{1}{(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-1} f(s) d s \\ \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j}}{j!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \quad \text { if } t \in[0, \infty) .\end{array}\right.$

Let $F: J \times E \times \ldots \times E \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c p, c v}(E)$ be a Carathéodory multimap which satisfies the following assumptions:
$(H 1)$ There exist functions $a, b_{j} \in L^{1}\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right), j=0, \ldots, n-1$, such that

$$
\left\|F\left(t, z_{0}, z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n-1}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{P}} \leq a(t)+\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} b_{j}(t)\left|z_{j}\right|
$$

for a.e. $t \in J, z_{j} \in E,(j=0, \ldots, n-1)$,

$$
a^{*}=\int_{0}^{\infty} a(t) d t<\infty, \quad b_{j}^{*}=\int_{0}^{\infty} b_{j}(t) e^{t} d t<\infty, \quad j=0, \ldots, n-1
$$

and $F$ has a measurable selection.
(H2) There exist nonnegative constants $c_{i k j}, d_{i k}(i, j=0, \ldots, n-1 ; k=$ $1,2, \ldots)$ such that

$$
\left|I_{i k}\left(z_{0}, z_{1}, \ldots, z_{(n-1)}\right)\right| \leq d_{i k}+\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} c_{i k j}\left|z_{j}\right|
$$

$\forall z_{j} \in E,(i, j=0, \ldots, n-1 ; k=1,2, \ldots)$,

$$
d^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} d_{k}^{*}, \quad c^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} e^{t_{k}}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} c_{k j}^{*}\right)<\infty
$$

where

$$
d_{k}^{*}=\max \left\{d_{i k}, i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\}, c_{k j}^{*}=\max \left\{c_{i k j}, i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\}
$$

(H3) There exists $p \in L^{1}\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{+}\right)$such that, for every bounded subset $D$ in $D P C^{n-1}(J, E)$,

$$
\chi\left(F\left(t, D^{(i)}(t)\right)\right) \leq p(t) \chi_{D}(D), \forall t \in J ;(i=0, \ldots, n-1)
$$

with

$$
p^{*}=\int_{0}^{\infty} p(t) e^{t} d t<\infty
$$

where $D^{(i)}(t)=\left\{x^{(i)}(t), x \in D\right\}$, and $\chi$ is the Hausdorff MNC.
(H4) There exists $l_{i k}>0$ such that, for every bounded subset $D$ in $D P C^{n-1}(J, E)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\chi\left(I_{k}\left(D^{(i)}(t)\right)\right) & \leq l_{i k} \chi_{D}(D),(i=0, \ldots, n-1 ; k=1,2, \ldots), \\
l^{*} & =\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} l_{k}^{*}, \quad l^{* *}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} l_{j k}<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
l_{k}^{*}=\max \left\{l_{i k}, i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\}
$$

and

$$
\chi_{D}(D)=\max \left\{\sup _{t \in J}\left(\chi\left(D^{(i)}(t)\right)\right), i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\}
$$

(H5) There exists a nonnegative constant $q$ such that

$$
q:=\frac{1}{\beta-1}\left(p^{*}+l^{*}\right)+l^{* *}+\|p\|_{L 1}<1
$$

Lemma 7. [11] Let $D \subset D P C^{(n-1)}$ be bounded set such that $D^{(i)}$ is equicontinous and $\lim _{t \rightarrow+\infty} e^{-t}\left|u^{(i)}(t)\right|=0$ uniformly for every $u \in D$. Then

$$
\alpha_{D}(D)=\max \left\{\sup _{t \in J} e^{-t} \alpha\left(D^{(i)}(t)\right): i=0,1, \ldots, n-1\right\}
$$

is a measure of noncompactness in $D P C^{(n-1)}$, where $\alpha$ is the Kurataowski measure of noncompactness on bounded sets in $E$.

Theorem 3. [3] Let E be a Banach space. The Kuratowski and Hausdorff $M N C s$ are related by the inequalities

$$
\chi(B) \leq \alpha(B) \leq 2 \chi(B), \quad \text { for every } B \in \mathcal{P}_{b}(E)
$$

Theorem 4. Assume that hypotheses $(H 1)-(H 5)$ hold. Then the BVP (1.1)-(1.3) has at least one solution.

Proof. Let $N: D P C^{(n-1)}(J, E) \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(D P C^{(n-1)}(J, E)\right)$ be defined by
$N(x)=\left\{h \in D P C^{(n-1)}: h(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}\sum_{j=0}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j}}{j!} x_{0 i} \\ +\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v(s) d s \\ +\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right),\right. \\ \left.\left.\ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)\right) \\ +\frac{1}{(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-1} v(s) d s \\ +\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j}}{j!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right),\right. \\ \left.\cdots, x^{n-1}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\ i f t \in[0, \infty),\end{array}\right\}\right.$
where
$v \in S_{F, x}=\left\{v \in L^{1}(J, E): v(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)\right.$, a.e $\left.t \in \mathbb{R}_{+}\right\}$.
( $H 1$ ) implies that the set $S_{F, x}$ is nonempty. Since for each $x \in D P C^{n-1}$ the nonlinearity $F$ takes convex values, the selection set $S_{F, x}$ is convex and therefore $N$ has convex values. Under assumptions $(H 1),(H 2), N$ sends bounded sets into bounded and equicontinuous sets.

Step 1. For bounded $D \subset D P C^{n-1}$, we show that for all $h \in N(D)$,

$$
e^{-t}\left|h^{(i)}(t)\right| \rightarrow 0 \text { as } t \rightarrow \infty,
$$

independent of $y \in D$. Let $h \in N(y)$. Then there exists $v \in S_{F, y}$ such that

$$
h^{(i)}(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v(s) d s \\
+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
+\frac{1}{(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-i-1} v(s) d s \\
\left.+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{n-1)}\right)\right), t \in[0, \infty) .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
e^{-t}\left|h^{(i)}(t)\right| \leq & e^{-t}\left(\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!}\right) \max \left\{\left|x_{0 i}\right|: i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\} \\
& +\frac{e^{-t} t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!}\left(a^{*}+\sum_{j=0}^{n} b_{j}^{*} R\right) \\
& +\frac{e^{-t} t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(d_{n-1 k}+e^{t_{k}} \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} c_{k i} R\right) \\
& +\frac{e^{-t} t^{n-i-1}}{(n-i-1)!}\left(a^{*}+\sum_{j=0}^{n} b_{j}^{*} R\right) \\
& +t e^{-t} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1}\left(d_{i k}+e^{t_{k}} \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} c_{k i} R\right) \\
& \rightarrow 0 \text { as } t \rightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

Step 2. To see that $N$ is a $\beta$-condensing operator for a suitable MNC $\beta$, let $\bmod _{C}(D)$ the modulus of quasi-equicontinuity of the set of functions $D$ defined by

$$
\bmod _{C}(D)=\max \left\{\lim _{\delta \rightarrow 0} \sup _{x \in D} \max \left|x^{(i)}\left(\tau_{1}\right)-x^{(i)}\left(\tau_{2}\right)\right|, i=0, \ldots, n-1\right\} .
$$

Then $\bmod _{C}(D)$ defines an MNC in $D P C^{n-1}$ which satisfies all of the properties in Definition 2 except regularity. Given the Hausdorff MNC $\chi$, let $\gamma$ be the real MNC defined on bounded subsets on $D P C^{n-1}$ by

$$
\gamma(D)=\sup _{t \in J} e^{-t} \chi_{D}(D(t))
$$

Let $D \in D P C^{n-1}$ be bounded and define the following MNC on bounded subsets of $D P C^{n-1}$ by

$$
\beta(D)=\max _{D \in \Delta\left(D P C^{n-1}\right)}\left(\gamma(D), \bmod _{C}(D)\right)
$$

where $\Delta\left(D P C^{n-1}\right)$ is the collection of all denumerable bounded subsets of $D$. Then the MNC $\beta$ is monotone, regular, and nonsingular. To show that $N$ is $\beta$-condensing, let $D \in D P C^{n-1}$ be bounded set and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta(D) \leq \beta\left(N^{i}(D)\right) \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will show that $D$ is relatively compact. Let $\left\{x_{m}, m \in \mathbb{N}\right\} \subset D$ and let

$$
N=L_{1}+L_{2} \circ \Gamma_{1} \circ S_{F}+\Gamma \circ S_{F},
$$

where $L_{1}: D P C^{n-1} \rightarrow D P C^{n-1}$ is defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(L_{1} x\right)(t)= & \sum_{j=0}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \times \\
& \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
& +\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

$L_{2}: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow B(E)$ is defined by

$$
L_{2}(x)=\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} x
$$

$S_{F}: D P C^{n-1}(J, E) \rightarrow L^{1}(J, E)$ is defined by

$$
S_{F}(x)=\left\{v \in L^{1}(J, E): v \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{n-1}(t)\right), \text { a.e } t \in J\right\}
$$

$\Gamma_{1}: L^{1}(J, E) \rightarrow D P C^{n-1}(J, E)$ is defined by

$$
\Gamma_{1}(g)(t)=\int_{0}^{\infty} g(s) d s, t \in[0, \infty)
$$

and

$$
\Gamma(g)(t)=\int_{0}^{t} \frac{(t-s)^{n-i-1}}{(n-i-1)!} g(s) d s
$$

Then

$$
\left|\Gamma g_{1}(t)-\Gamma g_{2}(t)\right| \leq \int_{0}^{t} e^{t-s}\left|g_{1}(s)-g_{2}(s)\right| d s
$$

Moreover, each element $h_{m} \in N\left(x_{m}\right)$ can be represented as

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{m}^{(i)}=L_{1}\left(x_{m}\right)+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)} \Gamma_{1}\left(g_{m}\right)+\Gamma\left(g_{m}\right) \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

with some $g_{m} \in S_{F}\left(x_{m}\right)$ and (3.5) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta\left(\left\{h_{m}, m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}\right) \geq \beta\left(\left\{x_{m}, m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}\right) \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From hypothesis $(H 3)$, for a.e. $t \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi\left(\left\{g_{m}(t), m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}\right) \leq e^{t} p(t) \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then,

$$
e^{-t} \chi\left(\left\{g_{m}(t), m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}\right) \leq p(t) \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)
$$

We have

$$
\chi\left(\left\{\Gamma\left(g_{m}\right)(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq e^{t} \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \int_{0}^{t} p(s) d s
$$

then

$$
\begin{gathered}
e^{-t} \chi\left(\left\{\Gamma\left(g_{m}\right)(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \int_{0}^{t} p(s) d s \\
\chi\left(\left\{\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)} \Gamma_{1}\left(g_{m}\right)(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq \frac{e^{t}}{\beta-1} \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=0}^{\infty}\right) p^{*}
\end{gathered}
$$

And so,

$$
e^{-t} \chi\left(\left\{\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)} \Gamma_{1}\left(g_{m}\right)(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq \frac{p^{*}}{\beta-1} \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)
$$

and

$$
\chi\left(L_{1}\left\{x_{m}(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq e^{t}\left(\frac{l^{*}}{\beta-1}+l^{* *}\right) \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)
$$

so that,

$$
e^{-t} \chi\left(L_{1}\left\{x_{m}(t)\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq\left(\frac{l^{*}}{\beta-1}+l^{* *}\right) \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)
$$

(3.6) and the lower additivity of $\gamma$ yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma\left(\left\{h_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq\left[\frac{1}{\beta-1}\left(p^{*}+l^{*}\right)+l^{* *}+\|p\|_{L 1}\right] \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) . \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq \gamma\left(\left\{h_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) \leq q \gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right) . \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $0<q<1$, we infer that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)=0 . \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we show that $\bmod _{C}(B)=0$ i.e, the set $B$ is equicontinuous. This is equivalent to showing that every $\left\{h_{m}^{i}\right\} \subset N^{i}(B)$ satisfies this property. Given a sequence $\left\{h_{m}\right\}$, there exist sequences $\left\{x_{m}\right\} \subset B$ and $\left\{g_{m}\right\} \subset S_{F, x_{m}}$ such that

$$
h_{m}^{i}=L_{1}\left(x_{m}\right)+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)} \Gamma_{1}\left(g_{m}\right)+\Gamma\left(g_{m}\right) .
$$

From (3.11), we infer that

$$
\chi_{D}\left(\left\{x_{m}(t)\right\}=0, \text { for a.e. } t \in[0, \infty) .\right.
$$

Hypothesis (H1) in turn implies that

$$
\chi\left(\left\{g_{m}(t)\right\}=0, \text { for a.e. } t \in[0, \infty) .\right.
$$

From (H1), the sequence $\left\{g_{m}\right\}$ is integrable bounded, hence semi-compact in $L^{1}\left(\Omega_{k}, E\right), k \in \mathbb{N}, \Omega_{k}=[0, k]$. Given $\gamma \in(0,1)$ and $K_{\gamma}$ a measurable set of $\mathbb{R}_{+}$such that $\lambda\left(K_{\gamma}\right) \leq \gamma$, then $\lambda\left(\Omega_{k} \backslash \Omega_{\gamma, k}\right) \leq \gamma$, where $\Omega_{\gamma, k}=\Omega_{k} \backslash K_{\gamma}$,

$$
g_{n}\left(\Omega_{\gamma, k}\right) \subseteq C_{\gamma, k}:=\overline{\left\{g_{m}(t): t \in \Omega_{k} \backslash K_{\gamma}, m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}}, n \in \mathbb{N},
$$

and

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\Omega \backslash \Omega_{k}}\left|g_{m}(t)\right| d \lambda(t) \leq \lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{k}^{\infty} p(t) d \lambda(t)=0, \Omega=[0, \infty) .
$$

Hence $\left\{g_{m}: m \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ is weakly compact in $L^{1}([0, \infty), E)$. Using Mazur's lemma, we deduce that, up to a subsequence, $\left\{h_{m}\right\}$ is relatively compact. Therefore $\beta\left(\left\{h_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)=0$ which implies that $\beta\left(\left\{x_{m}\right\}_{m=1}^{\infty}\right)=0$. We have proved that $B$ is relatively compact and so the map $N$ is $\beta$-condensing.
Step 3. By essentially the same method used in [14, Theorem 10.2], it can be proved that $N$ has a closed graph and is a locally compact operator.

Step 4. A priori bounds on solutions.
Let $x \in D P C^{n-1}$ be such that $x \in N(x)$. Then there exists $v \in S_{F, x}$ such that

$$
x(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sum_{j=0}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j}}{j!} x_{0 i} \\
+\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v(s) d s \\
\left.+\frac{t^{n-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)\right) \\
+\frac{1}{(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-1} v(s) d s \\
+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j}}{j!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{n-1}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
\quad i f t \in[0, \infty) .
\end{array}\right.
$$

We have

$$
x^{(i)}(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v(s) d s \\
+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
+\frac{1}{(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-i-1} v(s) d s \\
+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
\quad \text { if } t \in[0, \infty)
\end{array}\right.
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
e^{-t}\left|x^{i}(t)\right| \leq & \sum_{j=i}^{n-2}\left|x_{0 i}\right|+\left(\frac{1}{|\beta-1|}+1\right)\left(a^{*}+d^{*}\right) \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{|\beta-1|}+1\right)\left(c^{*}+\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} b_{j}^{*}\right)\|x\|_{D}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence

$$
\|x\|_{D} \leq \frac{\sum_{j=i}^{n-2}\left|x_{0 i}\right|+\left(\frac{1}{|\beta-1|}+1\right)\left(a^{*}+d^{*}\right)}{1-\left(\frac{1}{|\beta-1|}+1\right)\left(c^{*}+\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} b_{j}^{*}\right)}:=M_{i}, \quad(i=0, \ldots, n-1)
$$

Finally

$$
\|x\|_{D} \leq \max \left(M_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n-1\right):=M .
$$

From Lemma 3, we deduce that $N$ has at least one fixed point denoted by $x$. Moreover since $\operatorname{Fix}(N)$ is bounded, by Lemma 4, $\operatorname{Fix}(N)$ is compact.

## 4 Nonconvex case

In this section we present a second existence result for problem (1.1)(1.3) when the multi-valued nonlinearity is not necessarily convex. In the proof, we will make use of the nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder type for condensing map, combined with a selection theorem due to Bressan and Colombo [6], for lower semicontinious multi-valued maps with decomposable values. Also, another result is presented as an application of the fixed point theorem for contractive multi-valued operators. Let $\mathcal{A}$ be a subset of $J \times B$. $\mathcal{A}$ is $\mathcal{L} \otimes \mathcal{B}$ measurable if $\mathcal{A}$ belongs to the $\sigma$-algebra generated by all sets of the form $N \times D$ where $N$ is Lebesgue measurable in $J$ and $D$ is Borel measurable in $B$. A subset $\mathcal{A}$ of $L^{1}(J, E)$ is decomposable if, for all $u, v \in \mathcal{A}$ and $N \subset L^{1}(J, E)$ measurable, the function $u \widetilde{\chi}_{N}+v \widetilde{\chi}_{J \backslash N} \in \mathcal{A}$, where $\widetilde{\chi}$ stands for the characteristic function of the set $A$. Let $X$ be a nonempty closed subset of $E$ and $G: X \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(E)$ be a multivalued operator with nonempty closed values. $G$ is lower semi-continuous (l.s.c.) if the set $\{x \in$ $X: G(x) \cap B \neq \emptyset\}$ is open for any open set $B$ in $E$.

Definition 5. Let $Y$ be a separable metric space and let $N: Y \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(L^{1}(J, E)\right)$ be a multivalued operator. We say that $N$ has property ( $B C$ ) if

1) $N$ is lower semi-continuous (l.s.c.);
2) $N$ has nonempty closed and decomposable values.

Let $F: J \times E \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(E)$ be a multivalued map with nonempty compact values. Assign to $F$ the multivalued operator

$$
\mathcal{F}: C(J, E) \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(L^{1}(J, E)\right)
$$

by letting

$$
\mathcal{F}(y)=\left\{v \in L^{1}(J, E): v(t) \in F(t, y(t)) \text { for a.e. } t \in J\right\} .
$$

The operator $\mathcal{F}$ is called the Niemytzki operator associated to $F$.

Definition 6. Let $F: J \times E \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(E)$ be a multivalued function with nonempty compact values. We say that $F$ is of lower semi-continuous type (l.s.c. type) if its associated Niemytzki operator $\mathcal{F}$ is lower semi-continous and has nonempty closed and decomposable values.

Next we state a selection theorem due to Bressan and Colombo. let $Y$ be a Banach space. Then every l.s.c. multi-valued operator decomposable values has a continuous selection.

Theorem 5. [6] Let $Y$ be separable metric space and let $N: Y \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(L^{1}(J, E)\right)$ be a multivalued operator which has property (BC). Then $N$ has a continuous selection, i.e. there exists a continuous function (single-valued) $f: Y \rightarrow L^{1}(J, E)$ such that $f(x) \in N(x)$ for every $x \in Y$.

Lemma 8. [10] Let $F: J \times Y \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c p}(Y)$ be an integrably bounded multimap satisfying
$\left(\mathcal{H}_{l s c}\right) F: J \times Y \rightarrow \mathcal{P}(Y)$ is a nonempty compact valued multi-map such that
(a) the mapping $(t, y) \mapsto F(t, y)$ is $\mathcal{L} \otimes \mathcal{B}$ measurable;
(b) the mapping $y \mapsto F(t, y)$ is l.s.c. for a.e. $t \in J$.

Then $F$ is of lower semi-continuous type.
Theorem 6. Suppose that hypotheses $(H 1)-(H 5)$ and the conditions
(A1) $F: J \times E \times E \ldots \times E \longrightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c l}(E)$ is a multi-valued map such that:
a) $\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \mapsto F\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is $\mathcal{L} \otimes \mathcal{B}$ measurable;
b) $(x, u) \mapsto F\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is lower semi-continuous for a.e. $t \in J$;
(A2) $F\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \subset G(t)$ for a.e $t \in J$ and for all $\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in$ $E \times E \ldots \times E$ and with $G: J \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{w, c p, c}(E)$ integral bounded;
are satisfied. Then the impulsive boundary value problem (1.1)-(1.3) has at least one solution.

Proof. First, let $\mathcal{F}: D P C^{(n-1)} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(D P C^{(n-1)}\right)$ be defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F}(x)= & \left\{v \in L^{1}([0, \infty), E): v(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)\right) \\
& \text { a.e. } t \in[0, \infty)\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, we establish the properties of $\mathcal{F}(\cdot)$. Analogous results can be found in Halidias and Papageorgiou [16]. We prove that $\mathcal{F}(\cdot)$ has nonempty, closed, decomposable values and is l.s.c.

For the nonempty part, from hypothesis (A2) we have $F\left(\cdot, x(\cdot), x^{\prime}(\cdot), \ldots\right.$, $\left.x^{(n-1)}(\cdot)\right)$ is a measurable multifunction. Then there exists a sequence of measurable selections $\left\{f_{m}(t): m \geq 1\right\}$ of $F$ such that

$$
F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)=\overline{\left\{f_{m}(t): m \geq 1\right\}} .
$$

From (A2), we have $f_{m}(\cdot) \in G(\cdot)$. Using the fact that $G$ has weakly compact values, we pass to a subsequence if necessary to get $f_{m_{k}}(\cdot)$ converges weakly to $f(\cdot)$ in $E$. Since $\left\{f_{m_{k}}: k \geq 1\right\} \subseteq\left\{f_{m}: m \geq 1\right\}$, then $f \in \overline{\left\{f_{m}: m \geq 1\right\}}$. By Mazur's Lemma there exists $v_{m}(t) \in \overline{\operatorname{conv}}\left\{f_{m_{k}}(t): m \geq 1\right\}$ such that $v_{m}(\cdot)$ converges strongly to $f(\cdot)$ in $E$. So $f(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)$, for a.e. $t \in[0, \infty)$. Therefore, for every $x \in D P C^{n-1}, \mathcal{F}(x) \neq \emptyset$. The closedness and decomposability of the values of $\mathcal{F}(\cdot)$ are easy to check.

To prove that $\mathcal{F}(\cdot)$ is l.s.c., (H1) and (A1) imply by Lemma 8 that $F$ is of lower semi-continuous type. Using the Theorem 5 of Bressan and Colombo [6], we get that there is a continuous selection

$$
f: D P C^{(n-1)} \rightarrow L^{1}([0, \infty), E)
$$

such that $f(x) \in \mathcal{F}(x)$ for every $x \in D P C^{n-1}$. We consider the following problem:

$$
\begin{gather*}
x^{(n)}(t)=f(x)(t), \quad \text { a.e. } t \in J \backslash\left\{t_{1}, \ldots, t_{m}\right\}  \tag{4.1}\\
\left.\Delta x^{(i)}\right|_{t=t_{k}}=I_{i k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right), \quad i=0,1, \ldots, n-1, k=1, \ldots,  \tag{4.3}\\
x^{(i)}(t)=x_{0 i}, \quad(i=0,1, \ldots, n-2), x^{(n-1)}(\infty)=\beta x^{(n-1)}(0), \tag{4.2}
\end{gather*}
$$

Transform the problem (4.1)-(4.3) into a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $P^{i}: D P C^{(n-1)} \rightarrow D P C^{(n-1)}$ defined by

$$
P^{i}(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} f(x(s)) d s  \tag{4.4}\\
+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
+\frac{1}{(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-i-1} f(x(s)) d s \\
+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(x\left(t_{k}\right), x^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right), \\
\text { if } t \in[0, \infty) .
\end{array}\right.
$$

We shall show that the single-valued operator $P^{i}$ is completely continuous. From Step 1 through Step 3 of the proof Theorem 4, we can check that $P^{i}$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $D P C^{n-1}$ and $P^{i}$ is condensing.

Then $P^{i}$ is a completely continuous. There exists $b^{*}>0$ such that, for every solution $x$ of the problem (4.1)-(4.3), we have

$$
\|x\|_{D} \leq b^{*}
$$

Let

$$
U=\left\{x \in D P C^{(n-1)}:\|x\|_{D}<b^{*}+1\right\}
$$

From the choice of $U$ there is no $x \in \partial U$ such that $x=\lambda P^{i}(x)$ for some $\lambda \in(0,1)$. As a consequence of the nonlinear alternative of Leray Schauder type, we deduce that $P^{i}$ has a fixed point $x$ in $U$ is a solution of the problem (4.1)-(4.2). Then there exists $x$ which is a solution to problem (1.1)-(1.3) on $[0, \infty)$.

In this next part we present a second result for the problem (1.1)-(1.3) with a non-convex valued right-hand side. Let $(X, d)$ be a metric space induced from the normed space $(X,\|\cdot\|)$. Consider the Hausdorff-Pompeiu metric [5, 22]
$H_{d}: \mathcal{P}(X) \times \mathcal{P}(X) \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}_{+} \cup\{\infty\}$, given by

$$
H_{d}(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{B})=\max \left\{\sup _{a \in \mathcal{A}} d(a, \mathcal{B}), \sup _{b \in \mathcal{B}} d(\mathcal{A}, b)\right\}
$$

where $d(\mathcal{A}, b)=\inf _{a \in \mathcal{A}} d(a, b), d(a, \mathcal{B})=\inf _{b \in \mathcal{B}} d(a, b)$.
Then $\left(\mathcal{P}_{b, c l}(X), H_{d}\right)$ is a metric space and $\left(\mathcal{P}_{c l}(X), H_{d}\right)$ is a generalized (complete) metric space (see [19]).

Definition 7. A multivalued operator $G: X \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c l}(X)$ is called
a) $\gamma$-Lipschitz if and only if there exists $\gamma>0$ such that

$$
H_{d}(G(x), G(y)) \leq \gamma d(x, y), \quad \text { for each } x, y \in X
$$

b) a contraction if and only if it is $\gamma$-Lipschitz with $\gamma<1$.

Our considerations are based on the following fixed point theorem for contractive multivalued operators given by Covitz and Nadler

Lemma 9. [19] Let $(X, d)$ be a complete metric space. If $G: X \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c l}(X)$ is a contraction, then Fix $N \neq \emptyset$.

Let us introduce the following hypotheses:
(A3) $F: J \times B \times E \longrightarrow \mathcal{P}_{c p}(E) ;\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \longmapsto F\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ is measurable for each $\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in E \times E \times \cdots \times E$.
(A4) There exists a function $l \in L^{1}\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{+}\right)$such that, for a.e. $t \in J$
and all $\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right),\left(\bar{x}_{0}, \bar{x}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{x}_{n}\right) \in E \times E \times \cdots \times E$,

$$
H_{d}\left(F\left(t, x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), F\left(t, \bar{x}_{0}, \bar{x}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{x}_{n}\right) \leq l(t) \sum_{j=0}^{n}\left|x_{j}-\bar{x}_{j}\right|\right.
$$

and

$$
H_{d}(0, F(t, 0,0, \ldots, 0)) \leq l(t) \text { for a.e. } t \in J,
$$

with

$$
\int_{0}^{\infty} l(s) e^{s} d s<\infty .
$$

(A5) There exist constants $c_{i k}$ such that

$$
\left|I_{i k}\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)-I_{i k}\left(\bar{x}_{0}, \bar{x}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{x}_{n}\right)\right| \leq \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} c_{i k} e^{-t_{k}}\left|x_{i}-\bar{x}_{i}\right|
$$

with

$$
\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} c_{i k}<\infty \text { and } \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} c_{i k} e^{-t_{k}}<\infty, i=0,1, \ldots, n-1
$$

Theorem 7. Let Assumptions (A3)-(A6) be satisfied. If, in addition,

$$
\int_{0}^{\infty} l(s) e^{s} d s+\|l\|_{L^{1}}+\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} c_{j k}+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} c_{j k} e^{-t_{k}}<1,
$$

then the BVP (1.1)-(1.3) has at least one solution.
Proof. In order to transform problem (1.1)-(1.3) into a fixed point problem, let the multi-valued operator $N: D P C^{n-1} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}\left(D P C^{n-1}\right)$ be as defined in Theorem 4. We shall show that $N$ satisfies all the assumptions of Lemma 9. The proof will be given in one step.

Step 1. $N(x) \in \mathcal{P}_{c l}\left(D P C^{n-1}\right)$ for each $x \in D P C^{n-1}$.
Indeed, let $\left(x_{m}\right)_{m \geq 0} \in N(x)$ such that $x_{m} \longrightarrow \tilde{x}$ in $D P C^{n-1}$. Then there exists $v_{m} \in S_{F, x}$ such that for each $t \in[0, \infty)$

$$
x_{m}^{(i)}(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v_{m}(s) d s \\
+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(x_{m}\left(t_{k}\right), x_{m}^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x_{m}^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
+\frac{1}{(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-i-1} v_{m}(s) d s \\
+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(x_{m}\left(t_{k}\right), x_{m}^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, x_{m}^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Since $v_{m}(t) \in F\left(t, x(t), x^{\prime}(t), \ldots, x^{(n-1)}(t)\right)$, we may pass to a subsequence if necessary to get that $v_{m}$ converges almost everywhere to some $v$ in $E$. From (A4), we have

$$
\left|v_{m}(t)\right| \leq e^{t} l(t)(M+1), \quad\|x\|_{D} \leq M
$$

Also by (A4), we get

$$
v(t) \in F\left(t, \widetilde{x}(t), \widetilde{x}^{\prime}(t), \ldots, \widetilde{x}^{(n-1)}(t)\right), \text { a.e. } t \in[0, \infty)
$$

Thus

$$
\widetilde{x}^{(i)}(t)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left.\sum_{j=i}^{n-2} \frac{t^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} x_{0 i}+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} v(s)\right) d s \\
+\frac{t^{n-i-1}}{(\beta-1)(n-i-1)!} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} I_{n-1 k}\left(\widetilde{x}\left(t_{k}\right), \widetilde{x}^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{x}^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
\left.+\frac{1}{(n-i-1)!} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{n-i-1} v(s)\right) d s \\
+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \sum_{j=i}^{n-1} \frac{\left(t-t_{k}\right)^{j-i}}{(j-i)!} I_{j k}\left(\widetilde{x}\left(t_{k}\right), \widetilde{x}^{\prime}\left(t_{k}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{x}^{(n-1)}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) .
\end{array}\right.
$$

So $\widetilde{x} \in N(x)$. By the same method used in [14] Theorem 9.61, we can easily prove that

$$
\begin{aligned}
H_{d}\left(N(x), N\left(x_{*}\right)\right) \leq & {\left[\int_{0}^{\infty} l(s) e^{s} d s+\|l\|_{L^{1}}+\right.} \\
& \left.\Sigma_{k=1}^{\infty} c_{j k}+\Sigma_{0<t_{k}<t} \Sigma_{j=i}^{n-1} c_{j k} e^{-t_{k}}\right]\left\|x-x_{*}\right\|_{D} .
\end{aligned}
$$

So $N^{i}$ is a contraction and thus, by Lemma $9, N$ has a fixed point $x$ which is a solution of the problem (1.1)-(1.3) on $[0, \infty)$.

## 5 Concluding remarks

In this work, we have established the existence of solutions for Problem (1.1)-(1.3) in both the convex case and the nonconvex case for the nonlinearity. In particular, in each case, the Problem is formulated as a fixed point problem for a multi-valued operator, and then applications have been made from multi-valued analysis, topological fixed point theory, and measure of noncompactness in obtaining solutions.

While in this paper, we have focused on the existence of solutions for impulsive boundary value problems for higher order differential inclusions on the half-line, results concerning boundary value problems for first order impulsive differential equations and inclusions on bounded intervals can be found in $[4,9]$ and the references therein

Moreover, existence results for $n$th order impulsive integrodifferential equations on the half-line can be found, to name a few, in $[11,12,13]$ and the references therein.

Acknowledgement. The authors would like to thank anonymous referees for their careful reading of the manuscript and pertinent comments; their constructive suggestions substantially improved the quality of the work.

## References

[1] J. Andres and R. Bader, Asymptotic boundary value problems in Banach spaces, J. Math. Anal. Appl., 274, (2002), 437 - 457.
[2] Z. Agur, L. Cojocaru, G. Mazaur, R. M. Anderson and Y. L. Danon, Pulse mass measles vaccination across age cohorts, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA, 90, (1993), 11698-11702.
[3] J. M. Ayerbe Toledano, T. Domínguez Benavides and G. Lopez Acedo, Measures of Noncompactness in Metric Fixed Point Theory, Operator Theory: Advances and Applications 99, Birkhäuser, Basel, 1997.
[4] M. Benchohra, J. J. Nieto and A. Ouahab, Impulsive differential inclusions involving evolution operators in separable Banach spaces, Ukrainian Math. J. 64 (2012), 991 - 1018.
[5] V. Berinde and M. Păcurar, The role of the Pompeiu-Hausdorff metric in fixed point theory, Creat. Math. Inform. 22, (2013), No. 2, 35-42.
[6] A. Bressan and G. Colombo, Extensions and selections of maps with decomposable values, Studia Math. 90, (1988), $69-86$.
[7] C. Castaing and M. Valadier, Convex Analysis and Measurable Multifunctions, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, 580, Springer-Verlag, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1977.
[8] J. Diestel, Remarks on weak compactness in $L^{1}(\mu, X)$., Glasgow Math. J. 18, (1977), $87-91$.
[9] S. Djebali, L. Gòrniewicz, and A. Ouahab, First order periodic impulsive semi- linear differential inclusions: existence and structure of solution sets, Math. and Comput. Mod., 52, (2010), 683 - 714.
[10] M. Frigon and A. Granas, Théorèmes d'existence pour des inclusions différentielles sans convexité, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris, Ser. I, 310, (1990), 819-822.
[11] D. Guo, Existence of solutions for nth order impulsive integrodifferential equations in a Banach space, Proceedings of the Third World Congress of Nonlinear Analysts, Part 2 (Catania, 2000), Nonlinear Anal. 47, (2001), No. 2, 741 - 752.
[12] D. Guo, A class of nth-order impulsive integrodifferential equations in Banach spaces, Comput. Math. Appl. 44 (2002), No. 10 - 11, 1339 1356.
[13] D. Guo, Multiple positive solutions of a boundary value problem for nthorder impulsive integro-differential equations in Banach spaces, Nonlinear Anal. 63, (2005), No. 4, 618-641.
[14] J. R. Graef, J. Henderson and A. Ouahab, Impulsive Differential Inclusions A Fixed Point Approach, De Gruyter Series in Nonlinear Analysis and Applications 20, de Gruyter, Berlin, 2013.
[15] A. Halanay and D. Wexler, Teoria calitativa a systeme cu impulsuri, Editura Republicii Socialiste Romania, Bucharest, 1968.
[16] N. Halidias and N. Papageorgiou, Existence and relaxation results for nonlinear second order multivalued boundary value problems in $\mathbb{R}^{N}$, J. Differential Equations 147, (1998), 123 - 154.
[17] Sh. Hu and N. Papageorgiou, Handbook of Multivalued Analysis, Volume I: Theory, Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1997.
[18] M. Kamenskii, V. Obukhovskii and P. Zecca, Condensing Multivalued Maps and Semilinear Differential Inclusions in Banach Spaces, de Gruyter, Berlin, 2001.
[19] M. Kisielewicz, Differential Inclusions and Optimal Control, Kluwer, Dordrecht, The Netherlands, 1991.
[20] V. D. Milman and A. A. Myshkis, Random impulses in linear dynamical systems, in "Approximante Methods for Solving Differential Equations, Publishing house of the Academy of Sciences of Ukainian SSR, Kiev, in Russian, (1963), $64-81$.
[21] N. A. Perestyuk, V. A. Plotnikov, A. M. Samoilenko and N. V. Skripnik, Differential Equations with Impulse Effects. Multivalued Righthand Sides with Discontinuities, de Gruyter, Berlin, 2011.
[22] D. Pompeiu, Sur le continuité des fonctions de variables complexes (These), Gauthier-Villars, Paris, 1905, Ann. Fac. Sci. de Toulouse 7, (1905), $264-315$.
[23] I. I. Vrabie, Existence for nonlinear evolution inclusions with nonlocal retarded initial conditions, Nonlinear Anal. 74, (2011), 7047-7060.

Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci.
Ser. Math. Appl.

# An algorithm for the computation of the generalized solution for implicit systems* 

Mihaela Roxana Nicolai ${ }^{\dagger}$


#### Abstract

We discuss the solution of implicit systems in the critical case, i.e. when the classical assumptions of the implicit functions theorem are not satisfied. The generalized solution introduced bellow solves such cases and it may not be a manifold. In certain examples, it may have a complex structure and its approximation is nontrivial. We present here an algorithm for the approximation of the generalized solution. Numerical tests are also included.


MSC:26B10, 34A12, 53A05
keywords: implicit function theorem, differential equations, parametrization, generalized solution, critical case, approximation

## 1 Introduction

In this paper, we discuss the approximation of the solution for implicit functions systems, in the critical case. The method we use was introduced in [6] and was further studied in [4] and [7]. It is based on iterated systems of ordinary differential equations, to obtain the solution in parametric form.

We investigate a new algorithm solving this question.
This paper is organized as follows. In section two we recall some preliminary notions and results from [6] and [4]. Section three describes the

[^5]algorithm. In section four we give some numerical examples in dimension two and three, computed with MatLab.

For general references on the subject of implicit functions and parametrizations, we quote [3], [2]. In [3], Ch. 5 it is specified that a general solution of the critical case is not known.

## 2 Preliminaries

In dimension two, the problem we study is given by the implicit equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(x, y)=0, f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=0 \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right) \in \Omega \subset \mathcal{R}^{2}$, an open subset and $f \in C^{1}(\Omega)$. Consider the critical case, i.e.:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=0, \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

There exists $\left(x^{n}, y^{n}\right) \in \Omega,\left(x^{n}, y^{n}\right) \rightarrow\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)$, such that $\nabla f\left(x^{n}, y^{n}\right) \neq$ $0, \forall n$. Otherwise $f$ is identically null in a neighborhood of $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)$.

We solve (1) with the initial condition $\left(x^{n}, y^{n}\right)$. We use the Hamiltonian system (see [6]):

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{n}^{\prime}(t) & =-\frac{\partial f}{\partial y}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}\right) \\
y_{n}^{\prime}(t) & =\frac{\partial f}{\partial x}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}\right) \tag{3}
\end{align*}
$$

with the initial condition: $x_{n}(0)=x^{n}, y_{n}(0)=y^{n}$.
By Peano's theorem [1], we know that system (3) has a local solution on some interval $I_{\text {max }}$ that may be chosen independent of $n$.

We consider a closed disc $D$, with the center in $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right) \in \Omega \subset R^{2}$ and the set:

$$
T_{n}=\left\{(x, y) \in D ;(x, y)=\left(x_{n}(t), y_{n}(t)\right), t \in \bar{I}_{\max }\right\}
$$

We consider a convergent subsequence $T_{n_{k}} \rightarrow T_{\alpha}$ in the HausdorffPompeiu sense and put $T=\cup_{\alpha} T_{\alpha}$, where $\alpha$ is the subsequence.

If $f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=0$ and relation (2) is true, then T is called the local generalized solution for (1).

In dimension three, we consider the following problem:

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(x, y, z)=0, f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)=0, \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right) \in \Omega \subset R^{3}, f$ is in $C^{1}(\Omega)$.

Because we discuss the critical case, we have the following condition:

$$
\nabla f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)=0
$$

Let $\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \rightarrow\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)$ in $\Omega$, such that $\nabla f\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$ (in fact, we may without loss of generality, fix here $f_{x}\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$ ). The existence of such a sequence follows as before (otherwise f is identically null in a neighborhood of $\left.\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)$.

Consider two iterated Hamiltonian systems:

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
x_{n}^{\prime} & =-f_{y}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}, z_{n}\right), & & t \in I_{1}^{n}, \\
y_{n}^{\prime} & =f_{x}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}, z_{n}\right), & & t \in I_{1}^{n},  \tag{5}\\
z_{n}^{\prime} & =0, & & t \in I_{1}^{n}, \\
x_{n}(0) & =\tilde{x}_{n}, y_{n}(0)=\tilde{y}_{n}, z_{n}(0) & =\tilde{z}_{n} ;
\end{array}
$$

and

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\dot{\varphi}_{n} & =-f_{z}\left(\varphi_{n}, \psi_{n}, \xi_{n}\right), & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t), \\
\dot{\psi}_{n} & =0, & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t),  \tag{6}\\
\dot{\xi}_{n} & =f_{x}\left(\varphi_{n}, \psi_{n}, \xi_{n}\right), & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t), \\
\varphi_{n}(0) & =x_{n}(t), \psi_{n}(0)=y_{n}(t), \xi_{n}(0)=z_{n}(t) .
\end{array}
$$

where $I_{1}^{n}$ and $I_{2}^{n}(t)$ are real closed intervals containing 0 . It is proved in [4] that $I_{1}^{n}, I_{2}^{n}(t)$ may be chosen independent of $n$ and $t$, that is $I_{1}^{n}=I_{1}$ $I_{2}^{n}(t)=I_{2}$.

For $\left(\varphi_{n}, \psi_{n}, \xi_{n}\right): I_{1} \times I_{2} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}^{3}$, we denote

$$
T_{n}=\left\{\left(\varphi_{n}(t, s), \psi_{n}(t, s), \xi_{n}(t, s)\right) ;(t, s) \in I_{1} \times I_{2}\right\} .
$$

Like in dimension two, there is a convergent subsequence such that $T_{n} \rightarrow$ $T_{\alpha}$ in the Hausdorff-Pompeiu metric, where $\alpha$ denotes the subsequence.

So, we can again define the set called the generalized solution of (4):

$$
T=\cup_{\alpha} T_{\alpha}
$$

Moreover, if we also have $f_{y}\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$, one can also consider the following supplementary iterated Hamiltonian system:

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
x_{n}^{\prime} & =-f_{y}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}, z_{n}\right), & & t \in I_{1}^{n}, \\
y_{n}^{\prime} & =f_{x}\left(x_{n}, y_{n}, z_{n}\right), & & t \in I_{1}^{n},  \tag{7}\\
z_{n}^{\prime} & =0, & & t \in I_{1}^{n}, \\
x_{n}(0) & =\tilde{x}_{n}, y_{n}(0)=\tilde{y}_{n}, z_{n}(0) & =\tilde{z}_{n} ;
\end{array}
$$

and

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\dot{\varphi}_{n} & =0, & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t) \\
\dot{\psi}_{n} & =-f_{z}\left(\varphi_{n}, \psi_{n}, \xi_{n}\right), & & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t),  \tag{8}\\
\dot{\xi}_{n} & =f_{y}\left(\varphi_{n}, \psi_{n}, \xi_{n}\right), & s \in I_{2}^{n}(t), \\
\varphi_{n}(0) & =x_{n}(t), \psi_{n}(0)=y_{n}(t), \xi_{n}(0)=z_{n}(t) .
\end{array}
$$

Notice that if $\nabla f\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$, then by a good choice of the axes, one may obtain both $f_{x}\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$ and $f_{y}\left(\tilde{x}_{n}, \tilde{y}_{n}, \tilde{z}_{n}\right) \neq 0$. The solutions provided by the Hamiltonian systems or the iterated Hamiltonian systems are local around the initial condition. In dimension three, the solution of the supplementary system (7)- (8) should be taken together with the one of (5)-(6) in order to obtain more information.

## 3 The Algorithm

In this section we describe the steps of our algorithm. The question is related to the choice of the approximating initial conditions used in the definition of the generalized solution, according to Section 2. We write a unified algorithm in dimension two and three and we denote by $x_{0} \in \Omega \subset$ $R^{d}, d=2$ or $d=3$, the critical point in the implicit functions problem (9):

$$
f(x)=0, x \in \Omega, f\left(x_{0}\right)=0,
$$

$\nabla f\left(x_{0}\right)=0,(9)$
where $f \in C^{1}(\Omega)$.
Similar algorithms may be formulated for general implicit systems, as discussed in [7].

## Algorithm 2.1

Step 1: Consider $\varepsilon>0$ and a division of a neighborhood of the initial condition $x_{0}$, of dimension $\varepsilon$, in equal parts. We can choose for the neighborhood a sphere or a cube of "dimension" $\varepsilon$ and a division of this neighborhood in $k$ parts.

Step 2: We compute the solution for (3) in dimension two and for (5)-(6) in dimension three. These solutions are computed in each of some $k$ points chosen as initial conditions, fixed respectively in the $k$ parts of the division.

Step 3: We make a refinement of the neighborhood by dividing it in $2 k$ parts and/or we take its new dimension $\varepsilon / 2$.

Step 4: We again compute the approximate solutions for (3) or (5)-(6), in each of the corresponding new $2 k$ points.

Step 5: After each new iteration, we compute the Hausdorff-Pompeiu distance between the corresponding obtained solutions. The trajectories taken into account for this computations are truncated to a certain neighborhood of $x_{0}$, prescribed from the beginning.

Step 6: If the Hausdorff-Pompeiu distance is less then a certain fixed tolerance, then the algorithm stops. If it is greater than the tolerance, we return to step 3.

For the stopping criterion one can use different conditions. For example, we can also fix from the beginning a maximum number of iterations. In Step 2 and 4 one can also use the systems (7)-(8).

## 4 Numerical examples

All the computations were performed with MatLab.
Example 1 Let $f(x, y)=\left(x^{2}-y^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}-\frac{1}{4} y^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}-\frac{1}{16} y^{2}\right)$, with the critical point $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=(0,0)$.

We have $f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=0$ and $\nabla f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}\right)=0$.
In this example, the initial neighborhood of $(0,0)$ is fixed as $\left(-\frac{3}{16}, \frac{3}{16}\right) \times$ $\left(-\frac{1}{8}, \frac{1}{8}\right)$.

For the first iteration we take the approximate initial conditions as the four corners of this rectangle. We compute the corresponding truncated solution trajectories that lie in the square $\left[-\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{4}\right] \times\left[-\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{4}\right]$.

For the second iteration we add four more approximate initial conditions, the middles of the edges of the above rectangle.

For the third iteration we consider the rectangle $\left(-\frac{3}{32}, \frac{3}{32}\right) \times\left(-\frac{1}{16}, \frac{1}{16}\right)$ with initial conditions given by the corners and the middles of the edges. In the fourth iteration we add as initial conditions the middles of all the segments formed in the previous iteration. The last computed iteration again halves the edges of the rectangle and takes as approximate initial conditions sixteen similar points as in iteration four.

In Fig. 1, 2, 3, we show the computed trajectories in iterations 1, 3, respectively 5 (in Fig. 3, we also include the exact solution for comparison).

We have stopped the algorithm after five iterations since the result is already satisfactory.


Figure 1: Iteration 1


Figure 2: Iteration 3
We have computed the Hausdorff-Pompeiu distance between the obtained trajectories in two consecutive iterations and we have got the values: $h_{12}=0.191, h_{23}=0.093, h_{34}=0.060, h_{45}=0.046$. We have used the hausdorff routine of Hassan Radvar-Esfahlan [5].
In solving the Hamiltonian system (3) we have used the ode 45 routine of MatLab with a fine discretization. Since we work in the neighborhood of a


Figure 3: Iteration 5 and the exact solution
critical point, the gradient (the speed) is very small and it is necessary to integrate the equation over long time intervals in order to obtain significant trajectories.

Another variant of our algorithm is the following.
We keep fixed in all the iterations the same initial neighborhood of $(0,0)$, for instance as the one in the previous example: $\left(-\frac{3}{16}, \frac{3}{16}\right) \times\left(-\frac{1}{8}, \frac{1}{8}\right)$.

For the first iteration, we take as approximate initial conditions the corners of the rectangle and compute the solutions that are in the square $\left[-\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{4}\right] \times\left[-\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{4}\right]$.

For the second iteration we add the ones that have as approximate initial conditions the middles of the edges of the rectangle.

In the third iteration, we supplement the approximate initial conditions by the middles of all the segments formed in iterations one and two. This process can be, of course, continued.

In Fig. 4 we show the trajectories in iteration three together with the exact solution. In Fig. 5, the fourth iteration together with the exact solution is shown. The computed branches of the solution, in Fig. 5, intersect the true solution, which is impossible theoretically since they represent different level lines. This is due to the very small initial value $f\left(-\frac{3}{64}, \frac{1}{8}\right)=2.8012 e-8$ and the routine does not distinguish between very close level lines.


Figure 4: Iteration 3


Figure 5: Iteration 4

We compute the Hausdorff-Pompeiu distance between two consecutive iterations, and we obtain the following result: $h_{12}=0.1913, h_{23}=0.0978$, $h_{34}=0.0617$. We again used the hausdorff routine of Hassan RadvarEsfahlan [5].

Example 2 Let $f(x, y)=\left(x^{2}-y^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}+y^{2}-1\right)$.
We compute the corresponding solutions of (3), with four different initial conditions: $\left(0, \frac{1}{8}\right),\left(\frac{1}{8}, 0\right),\left(0,-\frac{1}{8}\right),\left(-\frac{1}{8}, 0\right)$, around the critical point $(0,0)$.

This choice of $f(x, y)$ has five critical points and the obtained trajectories, see Fig. 6, look very differently with respect to the previous example.

In case the second variant of the algorithm is used, in this example, in not a very fine neighborhood of $(0,0)$, with the approximating initial conditions $\left(0, \frac{9}{8}\right),\left(\frac{9}{8}, 0\right),\left(0,-\frac{9}{8}\right),\left(-\frac{9}{8}, 0\right)$, the numerical result would look like in Fig. 7 and would be incorrect. Clearly, if we work with $f_{\delta}(x, y)=$ $\left(x^{2}-y^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}+y^{2}-\delta^{2}\right), \delta>0$ small, then such confusions may arise easily. We recommend in each possible example to use various choices of the approximating initial conditions in order to get a good description of the searched solution.


Figure 6: Example 2


Figure 7: initial conditions $\left(0, \frac{9}{8}\right),\left(\frac{9}{8}, 0\right),\left(0,-\frac{9}{8}\right),\left(-\frac{9}{8}, 0\right)$

## Example 3 Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(x, y, z)=\left(x^{2}+y^{2}-z^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}+y^{2}-4 z^{2}\right)\left(x^{2}+y^{2}-16 z^{2}\right), \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the critical point $\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)=(0,0,0)$.
We have:

$$
f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)=(0,0,0) \text { and } \nabla f\left(x_{0}, y_{0}, z_{0}\right)=0 .
$$

For this example we choose four approximate initial conditions: $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{1}{10}\right)$, $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{15}{100}\right),\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{3}{10}\right)$ and $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{6}{10}\right)$, which are on a vertical line through $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}\right)$.

In Fig. 8 we show the upper part (with positive $z$ ) of the exact solution for (10) together with the approximating initial conditions and the solutions of the first Hamiltonian system (5). This figure can be rotated to see all
such details. The other half is symmetrical with it. In Fig 9 and Fig. 10 we show the solutions of the second Hamiltonian system (6) corresponding to initial conditions $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{1}{10}\right)$, respectively $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{6}{10}\right)$ (the other two initial conditions give similar graphical representations as in Fig. 10). Due to the second equation in (6), the surfaces represented in Fig. 9 and 10 are limited by the planes defined when the second coordinate is constant. One can remove this constraint by using as well the system (7), (8).

Remark 1 The above numerical examples use various choices of the approximate initial conditions. The chosen points are in a neighborhood of the critical point and should create a "net" around it. The neighborhood should be sufficiently small around the critical point, otherwise the obtained result may be flawed, as explained in Example 2.


Figure 8: Example 3


Figure 9: $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{1}{10}\right)$


Figure 10: $\left(\frac{3}{32}, \frac{1}{16}, \frac{6}{10}\right)$

Acknowledgement. This work was supported by Grant 145/2011 of CNCS Romania.

## References

[1] V. Barbu, Ecuaţii diferenţiale, Ed. Junimea, Iaşi, (1985).
[2] A. L. Dontchev, R. T. Rockafellar, Implicit functions and solution mappings, Springer, (2009).
[3] S. G. Krantz, H. R. Parks, The implicit functions theorem, Birkhäuser, Boston, (2002).
[4] M. R. Nicolai, D. Tiba, Implicit functions and parametrizations in dimension three: generalized solution, DCDS-A vol. 35, no. 6 (2015), pp. 2701 - 2710. doi:10.3934/dcds.2015.35.2701.
[5] Hassan Radvar-Esfahlan, http://www.mathworks.com/matlabcentral/ fileexchange/27905-hausdorff-distance.
[6] D. Tiba, The implicit functions theorem and implicit parametrizations, Ann. Acad. Rom. Sci. Ser. Math. Appl., 5, no. 1 - 2, (2013), pp. 193 208; http://www.mathematics-and-its-applications.com.
[7] D. Tiba, Implicit systems in arbitrary dimension: constructive local parametrization and generalized solution, (2014), http://arxiv.org/pdf/1408.6726.pdf.


[^0]:    *Accepted for publication in revised form on November 17-th, 2014
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ mbabutia@math.uvt.ro, Department of Mathematics, West University of Timişoara, 4 V. Pârvan Blvd., 300223 Timişoara, Romania
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ megan@math.uvt.ro, Academy of Romanian Scientists, 54 Independenţei St., 050094 Bucharest, Romania

[^1]:    *Accepted for publication in revised form on December 27-th, 2014
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ kaidouchi.wahida@gmail.com, Laboratory of Applied Mathematics and Modeling, University 8 mai 1945, P.O. Box 401, Guelma 24000, Algeria.
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ nesrine@hotmail.fr, Laboratory of Partial Differential Equations and Applications, University Hadj Lakhdar, Avenue Chahid Boukhlouf, 5000 Batna, Algeria.
    ${ }^{\S}$ aissaouizine@gmail.com, Laboratory of Applied Mathematics and Modeling, University 8 mai 1945, P.O. Box 401, Guelma 24000, Algeria.

[^2]:    *Accepted for publication on January 21-th, 2015
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ grest@unime.it, University of Messina, Department of Mathematics and Computer Science, via F. Stagno D'Alcontres, 31, 98166 Messina, Italy.
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ pstagliano@unime.it, University of Messina, Department of Mathematics and Computer Science, via F. Stagno D'Alcontres, 31, 98166 Messina, Italy

[^3]:    *Accepted for publication in revised form on April 7-th, 2015
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ c_fetecau@yahoo.com Academy of Romanian Scientists, 050094 Bucuresti, Romania and Technical University of Iasi, Romania, Department of Mathematics
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ Technical University of Iasi, Romania, Department of Theoretical Mechanics
    ${ }^{\text {§}}$ Abdus Salam School of Mathematical Sciences, GC University, Lahore 54600, Pakistan

[^4]:    *Accepted for publication in revised form on August 10-th, 2015
    $\dagger$ Johnny_Henderson@baylor.edu, Department of Mathematics, Baylor University, Waco, Texas 76798-7328 USA
    $\ddagger$ agh_ouahab@yahoo.fr, Laboratory of Mathematics, University of Sidi Bel Abbes, P.O. Box 89, 22000, Sidi Bel Abbes, Algeria
    ${ }^{\S}$ youcefi.samia@yahoo. com, Laboratory of Mathematics, University of Sidi Bel Abbes, P.O. Box 89, 22000, Sidi Bel Abbes, Algeria

[^5]:    *Accepted for publication in revised form on October 25-th, 2015
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ roxana.nicolai@gmail.com, "Simion Stoilow" Institute of Mathematics of the Romanian Academy

